This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

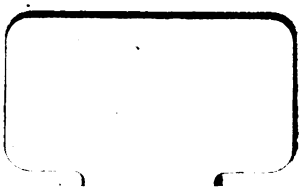
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Educ
1919
07.435

Edu F 1919.07.435



3 2044 102 868 999

155 Wilson Street

Brooklyn

Heath's Modern Language Series.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

BY

C. H. GRANDGENT,

PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

Revised and Enlarged

BOSTON, U.S.A.:
D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS.
1907

Educ T 1919.07.435

HARVARD UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Copyright, 1887 and 1904,
By C. H. GRANDGENT.

PREFACE.

THIS volume is the result of an attempt to put into convenient form and the smallest possible compass all the grammar that the ordinary student of Italian will need. Short as the book is, it contains some paragraphs which beginners will probably skip: the longer lists of words and endings, and a great part of the chapters on suffixes and irregular verbs will be useful mainly for reference. The vocabularies cover the twenty-one exercises; they are not intended to include words explained in the notes, nor proper names that are exactly the same in Italian and in English.

I have endeavored to make the book represent the Italian language as it is spoken and written at the present day; the exercises are taken chiefly from reading-books lately prepared for Tuscan schools. Still, I have tried to give also as many obsolete forms as students of the Italian classics will require.

It has been my aim throughout to make the rules clear for all classes of pupils, even for those ignorant of other foreign languages, provided they understand the technical words commonly used in grammars. With this object in view, I have ascribed to the Italian vowels the pronunciation of the English ones that are most like them: an accurate description of the Italian sounds would, I fear, prove confusing to beginners who have had no training in phonetics. It will be easy for the instructor to explain not only

the vowels, but some of the consonants, and the division of words into syllables, much better than can be done in a book like this.

The authorities I have consulted most are the dictionaries of Fanfani, Rigutini and Fanfani, Fornari (*Nuovo Bazzarini*), and Tommaseo and Bellini. I have made but little use of other grammars; I am, however, indebted to Toscani for some ideas and a few of my examples. The chapters on syntax, and the treatment of irregular verbs, pronouns, suffixes, and the plural of words in *-co* and *-go* are almost entirely the result of original work.

In conclusion, I wish to express my gratitude to Professor Nash, of Harvard, to my friend and teacher, Sig. Filippo Orlando, of Florence, and to the gentlemen who assisted me in correcting the proof-sheets; and I wish above all to thank Professor Sheldon, of Harvard, and Professor Bendelari, of Yale, without whose aid and encouragement I should scarcely have ventured to offer this book to the public.

CAMBRIDGE, September, 1887.

NOTE TO THE REVISED EDITION.

To facilitate the use of this book with classes I have included in it a full set of Lessons and Exercises, the latter being taken in large part from my *Italian Composition*. The Italian texts at the end of the chapters, in the body of the *Grammar*, can be used to advantage at the outset of the course for practice in pronunciation and reading at sight. The English exercises in the body of the book should be reserved for reviews.

CAMBRIDGE, May, 1904.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

PAGE

LESSONS AND EXERCISES ..... ix-xxxiv

PRONUNCIATION 1–7

ARTICLES 7–11

The Definite Article 7–10

The Indefinite Article 10

Exercises 1, 2 11

NOUNS 11–17

Gender 12–13

Number 13–16

Exercises 3, 4 16–17

ADJECTIVES 18–23

Gender and Number 18–20

Comparison 20–22

Exercises 5, 6 22–23

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS 23–29

Augmentative and Diminutive Endings 23–25

Numerals 25–28

Exercises 7, 8 28–29

DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS 30–35

Demonstrative Pronouns 30–31

Interrogative Pronouns 31

Relative Pronouns 31–33

Possessive Pronouns 33–34

Exercises 9, 10 35

PERSONAL PRONOUNS 36–46

Conjunctive Forms 36–40

PAGE

Disjunctive Forms 40–42
Forms of Address 43–44
Exercises 11, 12 44–46
AUXILIARY VERBS 47–55
Auxiliaries of Voice and Tense 47–53
Essere 47
Avere 48
Modal Auxiliaries 53–54
Exercises 13, 14 54–55
REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS 55–65
The Regular Verb 56–59
First Conjugation 56–57
Second and Third Conjugations 57–58
Fourth Conjugation 58–59
The Irregular Verb 60–63
Porre 60–61
Exercises 15, 16 63–65
MOODS AND TENSES 65–74
Infinitive and Participle 65–68
Past, Present, and Future 68–69
Conditional 69
Subjunctive 69–72
Exercises 17, 18 72–74
CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS 74–84
Conjunctions 74–76
Prepositions 76–80
Adverbs 80–82
Exercises 19, 20 83–84
INDEFINITE PRONOUNS 84–87
Exercise 21 87
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS ARRANGED ACCORDING TO CONJUGATION. 88–100
First Conjugation 89–90
Second Conjugation 90–93

PAGE

Third Conjugation 93–98
Present Regular 93–96
Present Irregular 96–98
Fourth Conjugation 99–100
Present Regular 99
Present Irregular 99–100
ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS 101–105
ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY 107–114
ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY 115–121
APPENDIX 123–127
Additional Notes on Pronunciation 123–125
Inflections of the Voice 126–127
INDEX 129–132

LESSONS AND EXERCISES.

NOTE. — The following forty-one lessons furnish, in the form of references to the body of the *Grammar*, a course of study in the rudiments of Italian. The numbers refer to *paragraphs:* they include all *subdivisions in the same type*, all *examples*, and all *paradigms*, belonging to them; but they do not comprise subdivisions in finer print unless these are expressly mentioned. The exercise following each lesson is to be used in connection with it; the exercises in the body of the book are reserved for review work.

LESSON 1.

Pronunciation: **1**; **2**; **2**, *a*; **3**; **4**, including the fine print except **s**, *d*; **5**; **6**; **7**; **8**. Pronounce all the examples several times.

EXERCISE I.

Pronounce this text: —

Quándo è fréddo è invêrno. Néll' invêrno cáde la nêve, e
When it-is cold it-is winter. In-the winter falls the snow, and
gli álberi sóno sénza fôglie e i giardíni non hánno fióri. Dópo,
the trees are without leaves and the gardens have-no flowers. Later,
l' ária comíncia a riscaldáre, nélle campágne si védono l' êrbe
the air begins to grow-warm, in-the fields are-seen grass
e i fióri, négli ôrti náscono i baccêlli, i pisêlli, pôi le ciliêge;
and flowers, in-the gardens come-forth string-beans, peas, then cherries;
gli uccêlli cántano, non si patísce più fréddo, si sta veraménte
the birds sing, we-do-not-suffer any-more cold, we-are really
bêne, e allóra è primavêra. Finísce la primavêra, comíncia
comfortable, and then it-is spring. Ends the spring, begins
il cáldo; il sóle brúcia; nélla campágna si védono le spíghe del
the heat; the sun burns; in-the country we-see the ears of
gráno, ci sóno tánte bêlle frútta, méle, pére, susíne, albicôcche,
corn, there are many fine fruits, apples, pears, plums, apricots,
pêsche. Quésto têmpo si chiáma estáte. Il cáldo va vía, e
peaches. This time is-called summer. The heat goes away, and
ritórna l' ária cóme nélla primavêra; le víti sóno cáriche
becomes-again the air as in-the spring; the vines are laden
d' úva, i fichi comínciano a dárci i lóro dólci frútti; ma a
with grapes, the fig-trees begin to give-us their sweet fruit; but
pôco a pôco si rifà un pô' fréddo, gli álberi pêrdono le fôglie,
little by little it-grows-again a little cold, the trees lose their leaves,
il vênto sóffia assái; e quésto têmpo si chiáma autúnno.
the wind blows hard; and this time is-called autumn.

LESSON 2.

Review Lesson 1.

EXERCISE 2.

Pronounce this text: —

1. Vi parlerò di Vittôrio Alfiêri, e ne ammireréte la fôrte
I-shall-speak-to you of Victor Alfieri, and you-will-admire-his strong
e costánte volontà. Égli êra náto nel mílle sêttecênto quaránta-
and firm will. He was born in 1749
nôve di nôbile famíglia piemontése[1]: êra cónte. Allóra si
of a-noble family of-Piedmont: he-was a-count. Then people
credéva che bastásse êssere nôbili per valére qualcôsa; perciò
believed that it-sufficed to-be noble in-order-to be-worth something; therefore
i più déi nôbili non istudiávano,[2] o studiávano[2] álla pêggio, perchè
most of-the nobles did-not-study, or studied carelessly, because
tánto la nobiltà dáva lóro dirítto álle cáriche e ágli onóri, ánche
their-mere-rank gave them a-right to offices and to honors, even
se êrano ignoránti. L' Alfiêri, da giovinétto, fu mésso a studiáre
if they-were ignorant. Alfieri, as a-lad, was put to study
all' Accadêmia di Toríno; ma égli dópo quálche ánno ne uscì
at-the Academy of Turin; but he after a-few-years came-out
sénza sapér[3] núlla di núlla, non ostánte che avésse un bêl-
without knowing anything-at-all, notwithstanding that he-had a fine
l' ingégno, perchè nè ánche l' ingégno può valére sénza lo stúdio.
mind, because not even talent can avail without study.
Uscíto pertánto dall' Accadêmia viaggiò per l' Itália, la
Having-come-out, then, from-the Academy, he-travelled through Italy,
Fráncia e l' Inghiltêrra.
France, and England.

2. Giúnto all' età di véntisêtte ánni, aprì, cóme si díce,
Having-arrived at-the age of 27 years, he-opened, as people-say,
gli ôcchi, e s' accôrse délla súa ignoránza. Vittôrio si vergognò[4]
his-eyes, and became-aware of his ignorance. Victor was-thoroughly-
altaménte di sè stésso; sperò che studiándo avrêbbe potúto[5]
ashamed of himself; he-hoped that by-studying he-might
giováre all' onóre d' Itália; e allóra féce il generóso[1] propôsito
add to-the glory of Italy; and then he-made the lofty resolve
di mutár[3] víta: determinò di abbandonáre gli usi e i costúmi
to change his-life: he-determined to give-up the habits and the customs
délla nôbile gioventù déi suôi têmpi, di lasciár[3] túttо per
of-the noble youth of his times, to leave everything in-order-to
istudiáre.[2] A far[3] déi buôni propôsiti ci vuôl[6] pôco; il fôrte
study. To make good resolutions takes but-little; the difficulty
sta nel mantenérli. E non è mica un affár di núlla, quándo úna
lies in keeping-them. And it-is-not at-all an easy-matter, when a

persóna per lúngo córso di ánni ha contrátto cêrte abitúdini
person through a-long course of years has formed certain habits
e cêrti costúmi, e si è avvezzáta a vívere in tal môdo,
and certain customs, and has-accustomed-himself to living in such a-way,
non è mica, díco, un affár di núlla un bêl giórno mutár víta,
it-is-not at-all, I-say, an easy-matter one fine day to-change one's-life,
e diventár uômo túttο affátto divêrso da quéllo di príma.
and become a-man entirely different from one's-former-self.

3. Grándi sfôrzi dovè fáre Vittôrio Alfiêri per mutár víta:
Great efforts Victor-Alfieri-had-to-make to change his-life:
vi básti sapére che siccóme non si sentíva tánta fôrza d' ánimo
suffice-it-to-say that as he-did-not-feel so-much strength of mind
da proseguíre[7] a studiáre, allorchè per le súe abitúdini avrêbbe
as-to continue to study, when from-force-of-habit he-would-
sentíto il desidêrio[8] d' uscír[3] di cása e di andáre a divertírsi,
have-felt the desire of going-out and going to amuse-himself,
l' Alfiêri si facéva dal servitóre legáre álla poltróna. È véro
Alfieri had-himself tied-by-his-servant , to-his arm-chair. It-is true
che a pôco a pôco la volontà prése[9] il di sópra: a pôco a
that little by little his will got the upper-hand: little by
pôco, s' intênde, l' Alfiêri non êbbe più bisógno di ricórrere a
little, you-understand, Alfieri had-no-more need of resorting to
quésti mêzzi[10]; e ciò appúnto prôva quánto è véro che núlla
this means; and this just proves how-true-it-is that nothing
è difficile a chi vuôle. Così[8] l' Alfiêri che si míse a studiáre
is hard to him-who wills. Thus Alfieri, who began to study
a véntisêtte ánni, púre potè arriváre ad êssere il più brávo
at 27 years, was-yet-able to-come to be the best
scrittóre di tragêdie dell' Itália; ed è úna délle glôrie del
writer of tragedies in Italy; and he-is one of-the glories of
nôstro paése.[1] Ma se quándo avéva fátto il proponiménto di
our country. But if, when he-had made the resolve to
mutár víta e di studiáre, l' Alfiêri, conoscêndo quánti sfôrzi
change his-life and to study, Alfieri, knowing what efforts
gli ci sarêbbero volúti[5] per mantenére la proméssa, invéce di
it-would-require to keep his promise, instead of
fársi legáre álla poltróna avésse détto: *non mi rièsce*, nè
having-himself-tied to-his arm-chair, had said "I-can't," neither
égli sarêbbe diventáto quell' uômo sómmo che fu, nè
would-he-have-become that great-man that he-was, nor
l' Itália potrêbbe óra vantáre un così[8] gran poêta.
could-Italy now boast-of such-a great poet.

[1] See **4, 8**, *c.* [2] The verb is *studiâre*: in Italian a word beginning with *s* plus another consonant, if it is immediately preceded by a word ending in a

consonant, prefixes *i* to the *s*; Italians are averse to a group of three consonants of which the middle one is *s*. [8] An infinitive often drops its final *e* in the interior of a phrase. [4] The reflexive verb *vergognarsi* ('to shame one's self') means 'to be ashamed.' [5] The compound conditional, in idiomatic Italian, is very often used in place of the simple conditional: *avrêbbe potúto giovâre* ('he might have helped') really means 'he might help'; so *ci sarêbbero volúti* ('there would have been required') means 'there would be needed.' [6] *Ci vuôle*, shortened here to *ci vuôl*, means literally 'there requires' or 'there is needed.' [7] See **4, S,** *b*. [8] See **4, S,** *a*. [9] **S** as in 'mason' (**4, S,** *d*). [10] See **4, Z,** *a*.

LESSON 3.

The inflection of *êssere*: **53,** *a*.

EXERCISE 3.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. Where[1] are the birds? — 2. It was winter. — 3. We[2] are in the spring. — 4. The vines will be laden with grapes. — 5. Where[1] would you[2] be in the winter? — 6. You[2] are without flowers. — 7. Without the sun it would be cold. — 8. The flowers were in the fields. — 9. Where[1] were you[2] in the spring? — 10. I[2] was in the country.

[1] *Dóve*. [2] These personal pronouns need not be translated.

LESSON 4.

The inflection of *avére*: **53,** *b*.

EXERCISE 4.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. I[1] have no flowers. — 2. When will they[1] have leaves? — 3. He[1] had apples and pears. — 4. You[1] would have no leaves. — 5. The spring has no snow. — 6. Have you[1] the ears of

corn? — 7. They[1] had no figs. — 8. When will he[1] have the birds? — 9. I[1] should have plums and peaches. — 10. The trees had no leaves.

[1] These personal pronouns need not be translated.

LESSON 5.

Articles and nouns: **9**; **10**, *a*, *b*; **11**; **12**; **12**, *a*; **14**, *a*, *b*; **15**; **17**; **18**; **19** (in general, nouns in *o* are masculine, nouns in *a* or *u* are feminine); **22**; **23**; **24**; **25**; **51**, 2.

EXERCISE 5.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. A corner. — 2. Some corners. — 3. Some rooms. — 4. The corner of a room. — 5. We are in the corner of the room. — 6. A man in a room. — 7. The man is in the room. — 8. The men are in the rooms. — 9. I have a gun. — 10. You have the gun. — 11. With the guns. — 12. A city. — 13. To the city and for the cities. — 14. Some birds on a branch. — 15. The birds are on the branches of the trees. — 16. The roots of the trees in the wood. — 17. The days of the month. — 18. The months of a year. — 19. The weeks of the year. — 20. For the countries of the earth. — 21. The prisons in the cities of the kings. — 22. With the son of the uncle.[1] — 23. The uncles[1] are with the fathers of the boys. — 24. The poem[2] is written[3] by the boy's uncle. — 25. The words are in the poem[2] written[3] by the two poets.[4]

[1] *Zío.* [2] *Poèma*, m. [3] *Scritto.* [4] *Poèta.*

LESSON 6.

Êssere and *avére*: **53**, *a*, *b*; **54**; **76**; **80**, 1.

EXERCISE 6.

[Based on the first paragraph of Exercise 2, p. x.]

1. He is a count. — 2. They are noble. — 3. You would be a count. — 4. We shall be noble. — 5. You have been ignorant. — 6. We shall have had the office.[1] — 7. They had had offices and honors. — 8. You are ignorant because you have not studied.[2] — 9. He had[3] the office[1] because he had been a count. — 10. People don't think[4] that he has[5] a great mind. — 11. He has had the office,[1] and therefore he has not studied.[2] — 12. You would have had the office,[1] if you had[6] studied.[2] — 13. People thought that he was[6] born in 1749. — 14. If we had[6] studied,[2] we should not be ignorant. — 15. If you were[6] ignorant, you would be put[7] to study. — 16. Even if we are ignorant, we shall have offices and honors, because we have been noble. — 17. Although they are[5] of noble family, they are not ignorant, because they have studied.[2] — 18. I was[8] noble, but I was[8] put to study, because, as a lad, I had[8] a great mind. — 19. Although we had[6] not travelled,[9] we should not have been ignorant, if we had[6] studied.[2] — 20. If you have travelled,[9] you will have offices and honors, although you have[5] not studied,[2] because you will not be ignorant.

[1] *La cárica.* [2] *Studiáto.* [3] Preterite. [4] *Non si créde* (see **86**). [5] Pres. subj. [6] Imp. subj. [7] *Méssi*, plural. [8] Imp. ind. [9] *Viaggiáto.*

LESSON 7.

Regular verbs of the first conjugation: **59**; **59**, *a.*

EXERCISE 7.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. The birds sang in the spring. — 2. Let us begin to sing. — 3. In the winter the wind will blow hard. — 4. When will they

begin to give us their sweet fruit? — 5. The sun would burn the vines. — 6. When will you sing? — 7. The wind began to blow. — 8. I burn the ears of corn. — 9. I began to sing. — 10. Sing when the wind blows. — 11. I begin to speak. — 12. If [1] he sang,[2] I should not speak. — 13. If [1] they spoke,[2] we should begin to sing. — 14. Although [3] the wind blows [4] hard, we shall sing. — 15. Although [3] you sing,[4] we begin to speak.

[1] *Se.* [2] Imp. subj. [3] *Benchè.* [4] Pres. subj.

LESSON 8.

Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations: **60** (the list of verbs at the top of p. 58 need not be learned).

EXERCISE 8.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. The flowers fall in the winter. — 2. The trees lost their leaves. — 3. He sees the sun. — 4. Do you believe that [1] I see [2] the cherries? — 5. He did not believe that [1] the vines lost [3] their sweet fruit. — 6. I do not believe that [1] you fall.[2] — 7. See the trees: they have lost their leaves. — 8. We shall lose the flowers. — 9. When I see the birds, it is spring. — 10. Would you believe that he had [3] seen the trees without flowers? — 11. The peas will come forth [4] in the spring. — 12. They would not come forth [4] without the sun. — 13. When the snow goes away, we see the peas come forth [4] in the fields.

[1] *Che.* [2] Pres. subj. [3] Imp. subj. [4] The infinitive is *nàscere.*

LESSON 9.

Regular verbs of the fourth conjugation: **61.**

EXERCISE 9.

[Based on Exercise 1, p. ix.]

1. We felt the cold. — 2. Do you feel the wind? — 3. The winter and the spring will end. — 4. The birds would not feel the heat. — 5. The flowers suffer [2] when the wind blows. — 6. The birds suffered in the winter. — 7. I do not suffer any more heat. — 8. I do not believe that [1] he suffers.[3] — 9. Do you believe that [1] he feels [3] the cold? — 10. The summer and the autumn ended.

[1] *Che.* [2] *Soffrire* is inflected in the pres. like *sentire.* [3] Pres. subj.

LESSON 10.

Adjectives and pronouns: **26**; **27**; **28**; **29**; **30**; **31**; **33**; **43**; **43**, *a*; **44**; **45**.

EXERCISE 10.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar.*]

1. The poor are always unfortunate. — 2. The high trees are far from the great cities. — 3. The most beautiful plant has the smallest flower. — 4. The largest villa is mine, the smallest is his, and the lowest is theirs. — 5. Many good fathers are now poorer, but their boys and their girls [1] are always honest. — 6. Who were the good girls [1] who spoke to the unhappy sailor? — 7. Whose are the big clubs of which the little boy spoke? — 8. Which are the hard [2] lessons [3] that our poor boys finished in two days? — 9. What is the beautiful story [4] her little girls [1] believe? — 10. In what far part of your great city are the rooms of the honest merchant, to whom the largest ships of the world belong [5]?

[1] *Ragázza.* [2] *Difficile.* [3] *Lezióne*, f. [4] *Stória*, f. [5] *Appartêngono.*

LESSON 11.

Parlâre and *crédere*: **59**; **59**, *a*; **60** (the list of verbs at the top of p. 58 need not be learned); **62**; **77**; **77**, *a*; **54**, *d*.

EXERCISE II.

[Based on the first two paragraphs of Exercise 2, p. x. *Viaggiâre* is conjugated with *avére*.]

1. I shall not leave Italy. — 2. They determined [1] to become noble. — 3. They would not leave France. — 4. He will be ashamed of himself. — 5. Let them leave [2] England. — 6. It is enough to abandon certain habits. — 7. He doesn't believe that Alfieri is ashamed [2] of himself. — 8. They did not believe [3] that we were studying.[4] — 9. We hoped [3] that they would travel through France. — 10. We do not believe that they are studying.[2] — 11. They speak to you of Victor, and you admire his strông will. — 12. I shall not believe that you have [2] changed your way of living. — 13. If we spoke [4] to you of Victor, you would admire his firm will. — 14. Do not believe that the customs of aristocratic youth increase [2] the glory of Italy. — 15. Study, and you will become an entirely different man from what you are. — 16. We abandoned [1] the habits of aristocratic youth, and travelled [1] through France and England. — 17. Let him not believe [2] that we admire [2] the customs of his times. — 18. They think that studying is enough [2] to change one's mode of life. — 19. If I believed [4] that studying was [4] enough, I should abandon the customs of youth. — 20. If I had [4] not travelled, I should not believe that most of the aristocrats leave [2] everything in order to study.

[1] Preterite. [2] Pres. subj. [3] Imp. ind. [4] Imp. subj.

LESSON 12.

Regular verbs: **59**; **59**, *a*; **60**; **61**; **62**; **63**; **72**; **75**; read **47**.

EXERCISE 12.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. We know Alfieri. — 2. They amuse themselves. — 3. Let them tie [1] themselves to the arm-chair. — 4. They will know the best writer in Italy. — 5. Feel a desire to make great efforts. — 6. They tied [2] themselves to the arm-chair. — 7. He knew [3] what efforts it would cost him. — 8. Changing one's way of living isn't enough. — 9. It wasn't enough [3] for you to go on studying. — 10. When he studies, he doesn't feel a desire to amuse himself.[4] — 11. By [5] studying you will come to be one of the glories of our country. — 12. If he tied [6] himself to the arm-chair, he would feel a desire to study. — 13. As he no longer needs to resort to this means, let him amuse [1] himself. — 14. As he didn't amuse [3] himself, he felt [2] a desire to go out of doors. — 15. If you knew [6] Alfieri, you would feel a desire to change your mode of life. — 16. If he felt [6] strong-minded enough to study, he would become the greatest writer in Italy. — 17. Change your way of living, and you will feel a desire to become a great poet. — 18. It isn't true that he knows [1] what efforts it will cost him. — 19. If we had [6] not felt a desire to go out of doors, we should not know such a great poet. — 20. By [5] amusing himself,[4] he will come, little by little, to need to make great efforts.

[1] Pres. subj. [2] Pret. [3] Imp. ind. [4] Add *si* to the end of the verb. [5] Omit. [6] Imp. subj.

LESSON 13.

Review Lesson 1.

EXERCISE 13.

Pronounce Exercise 2. Inflect the future of ***ammirâre***, the conditional of ***studiâre***, the present indicative of ***viaggiâre***, the preterite of ***vergognâre***, the imperfect indicative of ***sperâre***, the imperfect subjunctive of ***giovâre***, the imperative of ***mutâre***, the pre-

sent subjunctive of *determinâre* (*detêrmini*, etc.), the future of *abbandonâre*, the conditional of *lasciâre*, the present indicative of *legâre*, the preterite of *proseguîre*.

LESSON 14.

Conjunctive personal pronouns: **46**; **47**; **48** (study this paragraph with the greatest care), with footnotes; **48**, *a*, *b*, *c*; **49**; **50**; **86**.

EXERCISE 14.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. He will finish it. — 2. I speak to myself. — 3. You believe one another. — 4. The boys have the same clubs that belong[1] to us. — 5. Speak of it to them. — 6. We speak of them to him. — 7. Your poor father had a beautiful carriage: he sent[2] it to me. — 8. You have a large plant: give it to me. — 9. The Italian had some birds: he sent[2] them to you. — 10. I speak to him: he believes me. — 11. I begin to[3] speak to them. — 12. You have some parrots: give them to him. — 13. He had a bird: he sent[2] it to them. — 14. I have sent[2] it to her. — 15. You have some little birds: give me some.

[1] *Appartêngono.* [2] Use *mandâre.* [3] *A.*

LESSON 15.

Irregular verbs; *andâre:* **64**; **65**; **66**; **66**, *b*; **67**; **92**; **92**, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, *f* (p. 87); **92**, 1; **78**, *d*.

EXERCISE 15.

Inflect the present indicative of *condûrre* (*conducêndo*, *condûco*), the present subjunctive of *dîre* (*dicêndo*, *dîca*), the imperfect indicative of *fâre* (*facêndo*), the imperfect subjunctive of *muôvere*

(*movêndo*), the preterite of *piacére* (*piácqui*), the imperative of *scuôtere* (*scotêndo*), the future of *fáre*, the conditional of *trárre*.

LESSON 16.

Review Lesson 15.

EXERCISE 16.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. Keep on studying. — 2. We resorted [1] to this means. — 3. You went [2] out of doors. — 4. They were beginning [1] to study. — 5. Go and have yourself [3] tied to the arm-chair. — 6. Let them go and amuse themselves. — 7. You no longer resort to this means. — 8. Let us go and amuse ourselves. [4] — 9. We knew [2] what efforts would be necessary. — 10. We went [2] and tied ourselves [4] to the arm-chairs. — 11. When I go to study, I do not need to resort to these means. — 12. Alfieri went [2] and had himself tied to the arm-chair. — 13. By [5] going to study, we shall come to be great poets. — 14. When I felt [1] a desire to go out of doors, I used to go [1] and study. — 15. If our will got [6] the upper hand, we should go and study. — 16. If we went [6] and studied, we should not need to change our mode of life. — 17. When your will gets [7] the upper hand, you will go and study. — 18. If Alfieri had [8] gone to amuse himself, Italy would not now have so great a poet. — 19. When they go and study, they no longer need to have themselves tied to their arm-chairs. — 20. If they kept [6] their promise, they would not need to have themselves tied to the arm-chair.

[1] Imp. ind. [2] Pret. [3] *Vi.* [4] *Ci.* [5] Omit. [6] Imp. subj. [7] Future. [8] Imp. subj. of *êssere.*

LESSON 17.

Disjunctive personal pronouns: **51**; **51**, *b*; **52**; **73**; **74**; review Lesson 14.

EXERCISE 17.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. He spoke of it to us, to you, and to them. — 2. They believe us. — 3. They speak of themselves, and we speak of ourselves. — 4. She has finished it. — 5. Who will speak with me? — 6. You are very good, Mr. B. — 7. I speak to you, little boy, and to him. — 8. He is the boy of whom I spoke. — 9. Madam,[1] you have been [2] very unfortunate. — 10. Little boys, you will be surprised. — 11. I begin, Mr. B., to believe your words. — 12. They have spoken of it to us and to you. — 13. Do not think of [3] them: think of [3] her. — 14. Will you speak of it to him or to me? — 15. Mr. B. and Mr. D., you are unfortunate: the great trees near your villa belong [4] to two merchants, and not to you.

[1] *Signóra.* [2] Fem. [3] *A.* [4] *Appartêngono.*

LESSON 18.

The whole chapter on Personal Pronouns (pp. 36–44), except the Exercises at the end.

EXERCISE 18.

[Based on the second paragraph of Exercise 2. In all sentences in which the second person is used, translate it in three ways.]

1. Open your eyes, and you will be thoroughly ashamed of yourselves. — 2. Do not open them; if [1] you opened [2] them, you would be ashamed. — 3. They have left us; do not abandon us. — 4. I have determined to accustom myself to live in such a way. — 5. By [3] accustoming yourself to study, you will become an entirely different man. — 6. I hope so [4]; I am ashamed to [5] live in such a way. — 7. They had accustomed themselves to leave everything. — 8. Are you ashamed to give up your habits? — 9. He says so [4] to me and to you; he has determined to give

them up. — 10. Does he say so [4] to you? — 11. He will leave it to us. — 12. She might leave them to me. — 13. He wishes to [8] keep them. — 14. It will not be at all an easy matter for [6] you. — 15. I should be ashamed of it.

[1] *Se.* [2] Imp. subj. [3] Omit. [4] 'It.' [5] *Di.* [6] *Per.*

LESSON 19.

Irregular verbs of the first conjugation: **92**, 1, 2, 3, 4; read **79**, *b* (including 1, 2, 3, pp. 77 and 78).

EXERCISE 19.

[Based on Exercise 2.]

1. Let us give them the offices. — 2. We have made good resolutions. — 3. They had not given the office to Alfieri. — 4. I don't go and study: I am [1] talking. — 5. We shall be [1] admiring Alfieri's tragedies. — 6. If I made [2] good resolutions, I should go and study. — 7. I don't think that the difficulty lies [3] in making good resolutions. — 8. If he were [1] always [4] talking, he would not do anything.[5] — 9. Do everything, but don't go and live in such a way. — 10. We do not believe that rank gives [8] them a right to everything. — 11. By [6] giving them everything, he would be able to change his mode of life. — 12. You used to go [7] and study, and that gave [7] you [8] a right to the greatest honors. — 13. If you went [2] and amused yourself,[8] they would not give you [8] the office. — 14. They used to make [7] good resolutions, but the difficulty was [7] in keeping them. — 15. If we gave [2] them the office, the difficulty would be in making them study. — 16. By [6] resolving to abandon the customs of aristocratic youth, he would do himself [9] honor. — 17. When you make [10] a good [11] resolution, you will go and study; and then they will give you [8] everything. — 18. Let them resolve to study, and let them go to the Academy of Turin. — 19. Their rank gives them a right to offices, even if they do not resolve to change their way of living. — 20. He

did not resolve [12] to study, but went [12] and amused himself; and therefore they did not give [12] him offices nor honors.

[1] Use *stâre*. [2] Imp. subj. [3] Pres. subj. [4] *Sèmpre*. [5] *Nûlla*. [6] Omit. [7] Imp. ind. [8] *Vi*. [9] *Si*. [10] Future. [11] *Buôn* (**29**, *c*). [12] Pret.

LESSON 20.

The whole chapter on Articles (pp. 7–10), except the Exercises at the end.

EXERCISE 20.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

1. I am a poet. — 2. Alfieri, a writer who began to study at twenty-seven, became a great poet. — 3. Habits bind us. — 4. Writers have to resort to this means. — 5. The mind makes an effort. — 6. Great efforts are hard. — 7. He goes to amuse himself with the poets. — 8. Knowing the habits of writers, I had him tied to his arm-chair. — 9. Mr. Alfieri studies in my arm-chair. — 10. Mr. Alfieri, you will go to Italy.

LESSON 21.

Irregular verbs of the second conjugation: **92**, 5–14; **57** (study the examples with particular care); **54**, *a*. Note that *piacére* is intransitive: 'it pleases him' = *gli piáce*.

EXERCISE 21.

[Based on Exercise 1.]

1. He does not know when string beans come forth. — 2. The snow fell in the winter. — 3. The fig-trees ought to have given us their sweet fruit. — 4. They are sitting in the gardens. — 5. You will see them in the spring. — 6. The leaves would be lying in the fields. — 7. Do you like apricots [1]? — 8. Be silent! I do not like fruit. — 9. Birds are wont to sing in the spring. — 10. I ought to begin.

[1] 'Do apricots please you?'

LESSON 22.

Review Lesson 21.

EXERCISE 22.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. We have had[1] to keep still : we do not know his name. — 2. It fell[2] and lay[2] three days on the ground. — 3. He was sitting[3] in the room where his brother lay.[3] — 4. When I see[4] them, I shall have[1] to keep still, because I do not know their names. — 5. He saw[2] me, but I didn't suit[2] him. — 6. Do you know where he is sitting? — 7. They are lying under the table : don't you see them? — 8. If I saw[5] him, I should have[1] to speak to him. — 9. They will not know where we have seen them. — 10. See her : she doesn't know that we have[6] come back. — 11. Has she seen these plants? Do they suit her? — 12. He doesn't believe that I know[7] his name. — 13. Let us see where they are going. — 14. It lies there, where it has[6] fallen. — 15. When I saw[2] that they had[6] fallen, I was silent.[2] — 16. You saw[2] my coat : how[8] did it suit[2] you? — 17. If we had[5] seen them fall, we should know where they are. — 18. He didn't believe[8] that they were lying[5] on the table. — 19. They don't believe that you see[7] them. — 20. If they keep still, we shall not know where they have been.

[1] Use *dovére*. [2] Pret. [3] Imp. ind. [4] Future. [5] Imp. subj. [6] Use *èssere*. [7] Pres. subj. [8] *Côme*.

LESSON 23.

Irregular verbs of the second conjugation: **92**, 15–23; **57**; **45**, *c*. *Dolére* takes an *indirect* object.

EXERCISE 23.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. My eyes pain me; I don't want to stay. — 2. We shall not be able to persuade him; he doesn't want to keep still. — 3. If we were not able [1] to stay, it would grieve him very much.[2] — 4. They were in the habit [3] of staying [4] five days. — 5. If he were holding [1] it, he would let [5] it fall. — 6. They seem large, but they cannot be good. — 7. He wanted [6] to go, but he could [6] not: I held [6] him. — 8. You will not persuade me: I shall not be willing to do it. — 9. We saw [6] them: they are not worth anything.[7] — 10. If he doesn't want to stay, I'll hold him. — 11. He remained [6] three days, because his head pained [8] him. — 12. It grieved [6] me, but I had [6] to do it. — 13. I don't believe that it hurts [8] him very much.[2] — 14. If you wish it, they will stay with you. — 15. I have seen them this year; they seemed [6] very little to me: I should have thought that they were not worth [1] anything.[7] — 16. You don't believe that he is willing [8] to stay. — 17. If you wanted [1] to stay, you wouldn't be able to sit down. — 18. If you don't believe that I can [8] keep still, don't remain here. — 19. He cannot stay: he has to go and study. — 20. Let them remain there, if they don't want to come back.

[1] Imp. subj. [2] *Mólto.* [3] Imp. ind. [4] 'Of staying' = '(to) stay.' [5] *Lasciáre.* [6] Pret. [7] *Niênte.* [8] Pres. subj.

LESSON 24.

Auxiliary verbs: **53**, *a*, *b*; **54**; **54**, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, *e*; **55**; **57**; read the synopses in **56**. Note that *andáre* is conjugated with *êssere.*

EXERCISE 24.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. I shall have finished the poem.[1] — 2. They had built[2] a city. — 3. We should have spoken.[3] — 4. He will have gone. — 5. You would have come.[4] — 6. The poor boys who have come[4] to the city have spoken of it to their mothers. — 7. We have finished our questions, but they have been very short. — 8. The villas which the boy's father has built[2] are the most beautiful in the world. — 9. The great[5] duke has gone to speak to the unhappy sailors who have come[4] to our city. — 10. If I had[6] come,[4] they would have sent me to the city. — 11. I do not believe that he has[7] come.[4] — 12. We should not have believed that you had[6] spoken of it to him. — 13. If I had[6] spoken of it, he would have sent it to me. — 14. If they had[6] sent it to her, she would have come[4] to speak of it to me. — 15. We believed that the largest prisons in the city had[6] been built[2] by an unhappy king, whose father was an Italian duke.

[1] See Ex. 5, note 2. [2] Use *costruire*. [3] Two translations. [4] *Venire*, p. p. *venuto*, aux. *essere*. [5] See **29**, *c*. [6] Imp. subj. [7] Pres. subj.

LESSON 25.

Regular verbs: **58**; **58**, *a*; **59**; **59**, *a*; **60**; **61**; **62**; **63**; read **77**, *d, f, g, h*. *Sentire* means "to feel."

EXERCISE 25.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. The year ends with December. — 2. We speak of these things, but you don't believe us. — 3. I don't believe that the year ends[1] with December. — 4. Finish all the things that you have begun. — 5. He didn't believe[2] that we felt[3] the heat. — 6. You related[4] many things, but I didn't believe[4] them all. —

7. They feel the heat, but they don't observe the smoke. — 8. If he hastened,[3] they would flee. — 9. The water boils, but we don't feel the heat. — 10. What prevents us from[5] observing these objects? — 11. Let us hasten: they will eat[6] everything. — 12. If I repeated[3] these things, you would learn them. — 13. Let them believe everything: they will not prevent me from[5] thinking. — 14. You haven't learned those things: I repeat them to you. — 15. You don't believe that he repeats[1] everything. — 16. Observe them: they are hastening; where are they fleeing? — 17. I didn't finish[4] it: they prevented[4] me from[5] hastening. — 18. If he thought[3] that you were not observing[3] him, he would eat[6] everything. — 19. Learn everything, and repeat it to me in[7] two days. — 20. We shall study three years; by[8] studying we shall learn everything.

[1] Pres. subj. [2] Imp. ind. [3] Imp. subj. [4] Pret. [5] *Di*, with infin. [6] *Mangiâre*. [7] *Fra*. [8] Omit.

LESSON 26.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, 24–73 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses and all verbs marked *poetical* or *rare*); **69**; **70**; **91**, *a*.

EXERCISE 26.

[Based on the first paragraph of Exercise 2. The forms of irregular verbs not yet learned may be found in the List, pp. 101 ff.]

If I should speak[1] to you of Victor, you would admire his strong, firm will. He was born[2] in 1749, of a noble family of Piedmont; he is a count. Nowadays[3] we don't believe that being noble is enough[4] to make us worth something; therefore most young men study, and are worth something, because they know that, if they are ignorant, their rank alone will not give them a right to offices and honors. But Victor, as a lad, studied carelessly; and, although he has[4] a fine mind, he is ignorant, and doesn't know anything at all. We sent him to the Academy

of Turin. But he didn't know that talent is of no use without study; and a few years later he came out without having studied nor even travelled, and without knowing that study is worth something. He didn't admire the Academy, and he didn't speak of it; he couldn't study, and he didn't know anything at all, because he thought it was enough[5] to have a fine mind. He was noble, but they didn't give[2] him offices nor honors, because he was ignorant.

[1] Imp. subj. [2] Pret. [3] *Oggidì.* [4] Pres. subj. [5] Imp. subj.

LESSON 27.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, 75–124 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses and all verbs marked *poetical* or *rare*); **87**; **88**; **89.**

EXERCISE 27.

[Based on the second paragraph of Exercise 2. The forms of irregular verbs not yet learned may be found in the List. *Vivere* is conjugated with *avére.*]

He arrived at the age of twenty-seven, and then, one fine day, he opened his eyes. Now[1] he is thoroughly ashamed of himself, and hopes that by changing his mode of life he will be able to become an entirely different man from what he has been. He has perceived his ignorance, and has resolved to give up the habits that he has formed during a long course of years; he has determined to accustom himself to study. He says to himself: "It will not cost much to make good resolutions; the difficulty will be in keeping them. But I shall keep them — I shall accustom myself to living in an entirely different way from formerly — I shall leave everything in order to study. I resolve to change my mode of life. It will be no small matter, because I have lived hitherto[2] in an entirely different way; and when we live in such a way, we form[3] certain customs — but I shall not notice it: by studying and keeping my good resolutions I shall accustom myself to such a life. I will do it. I

should like to be a credit to Italy. I perceive my ignorance, and I am ashamed of myself."

[1] *Adèsso.* [2] *Finóra.* [3] See p. 97, no. 132.

LESSON 28.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, 126–148 (omitting forms enclosed in parentheses).

EXERCISE 28.

[Based on the third paragraph of Exercise 2.]

Victor knew that he would have to make great efforts, that it wasn't enough to feel a desire to study, and that he would have need of great strength of mind; but he said[1] to himself that little by little his will would get the upper hand, and that by continuing to study he would come to be a good writer. He understood and perceived what efforts it would cost him; but he resolved to change his mode of life, and he kept his promise. It is true that it cost him great efforts. He no longer went[2] out of doors. When he felt a desire to amuse himself instead of studying, he had to have himself tied to his arm-chair. But little by little he became a great poet, and came to have no more need of having himself tied. Then[3] he knew that he had got the upper hand, and said[4] to himself: "I shall not resort to this means any longer: I have no more need of it. I shall begin to study, I shall resolve to go on, and I shall keep my promise. I can and will do it. I have changed my way of living. It has been hard — I know what efforts it has cost me; but now[5] I shall not tie myself any more. I make promises and keep them: my will has got the upper hand."

[1] *Dicèva.* [2] *Usciva.* [3] *Allóra.* [4] *Dísse.* [5] *Óra.*

LESSON 29.

Personal pronouns: **46**; **47**; **47**, *a*; **48**; **48**, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*; **49**; **50**; **51**; **51**, *a*, *b*; **52**; **55**.

EXERCISE 29.

[Based on Exercise 1. Translate the second person in three ways.]

1. When will you begin to sing to us? — 2. Have you burned yourself? — 3. Seeing you in the garden, I called you. — 4. Finish it in the summer. — 5. Having finished them, you will give them to us. — 6. Do not give it to them. — 7. I should have given them to you. — 8. Give me your cherries. — 9. Have you any of these pears? — 10. Give her some. — 11. What is your name[1]? — 12. I could have given it to you. — 13. Is it necessary to give it to me? — 14. I should make him begin it. — 15. Give it to me. — 16. Sing it to them. — 17. Do not burn yourself. — 18. I am calling: is it you? — 19. I gave it to you and to him. — 20. Have you lost your apples? — 21. I ought to have called you. — 22. Let her see it. — 23. You can see me, but I cannot see you. — 24. He sees the birds, but they do not see him. — 25. Let me see some.

[1] 'How (*cóme*) do you call yourself?'

LESSON 30.

Irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: **92**, 149–161; **82**; **84**. *Morire* is conjugated with *essere*.

EXERCISE 30.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. See Naples[1] and then die. — 2. They opened the window. — 3. Let them cover themselves and remain covered. — 4. We don't open the door; the wind has opened it. — 5. If I sew all[2] day, I shall die. — 6. They have built a great village. — 7. If they die, we shall bury them in the grove. — 8. I don't believe that you are dying.[3] — 9. What are they filling? They offer me water. — 10. The boy has died, and his parents are burying him. — 11. He will fill it, and then he will offer it to you. — 12. Our friends, who died last year, are buried in the wood. — 13. Do

you believe that he is building [3] a villa? — 14. If I suffered [4] as my parents have suffered, I should die. — 15. While they were building [5] the city, many men died. — 16. He suffered [5] always, because he didn't digest [5] the food. — 17. Offer him bread: perhaps he will digest it. — 18. We suffer — we are too unfortunate: let us die. — 19. I eat [6] this bread because you have offered it to me; but I don't digest it. — 20. If he dies, he will not be buried, but the birds will cover him with [7] leaves.

[1] *Nápoli.* [2] 'All the.' [3] Pres. subj. [4] Imp. subj. [5] Imp. ind. [6] *Mangiáre.* [7] *Di.*

LESSON 31.

Irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: **92**, 162–168.

EXERCISE 31.

[The words are to be found in the English-Italian vocabulary of the *Grammar*.]

1. You tell it to me, but I don't hear you. — 2. I go out every day. — 3. Hear me: I shall tell you everything. — 4. We went up, but our friends didn't come. — 5. He tells me that they have [1] come. — 6. He opens the door, but he doesn't go out. — 7. I tell you that he will come. — 8. Thus speaking, I open the door and go out. — 9. They told him that you would come. — 10. He built himself a villa in the grove, and then he died. — 11. We told them that he had built a villa. — 12. We come, we go up, and we come out, but we don't disappear. — 13. We have told him that you are coming. — 14. I come here to see everything: they are building me a villa. — 15. If I told [2] you everything, you would die. — 16. You [3] have opened the door; but if you [3] go out, you [3] die. — 17. They come and disappear. Where do they go? Tell me, do they all die? — 18. I don't believe that they are going up.[4] Let them come, and they shall hear me. I shall say to them: "I came, I saw, I conquered.[5]" — 19. He says that he will come; he comes; he disappears;

and we do not know where he has[1] gone. — 20. He came — I heard him open the door; he went up, and then he disappeared. I came out, but I did not see him: he had[1] died. We came here to find him, and we buried him in the wood.

[1] Use *èssere*. [2] Imp. subj. [3] Second pers. sing. [4] Pres. subj. [5] *Vincere*, irreg. verb.

LESSON 32.

The whole chapter on Auxiliary Verbs (pp. 47–54), except Exercise 13 at the end. See also **42.**

EXERCISE 32.

Translate Exercise 14 on p. 55.

LESSON 33.

Regular verbs, and irregular verbs of the fourth conjugation: **58**; **58**, *a*; **59**; **59**, *a*, *b*; **60**; **61**; **62**; **63**; **63**, *a*; **92**, 149–168.

EXERCISE 33.

Translate Exercise 16 on pp. 64, 65.

LESSON 34.

Irregular verbs of the first and second conjugations: **66**, *a*, *b*, *c*; **68**, *a*, *b*; **92**, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*; **92**, 1–23.

EXERCISE 34.

Inflect: the preterite of *fàre*, *sapére*, *dovére*, *vedére*, *piacére*, *dolére*, *rimanére*, *tenére*, *valére*, *volére*, *parére*, *potére*, *persuadére*; the imperfect indicative and subjunctive of *fàre*, *giacére*, *volére*; the imperative of *vedére*, *rimanére*, *tenére*.

LESSON 35.

Irregular verbs of the third conjugation: **92**, *e*, *f*, *g*; **92**, 24–148.

EXERCISE 35.

Translate the first half of Exercise 18 on p. 73.

LESSON 36.

The whole chapter on Moods and Tenses (pp. 65–72).

EXERCISE 36.

Translate the second half of Exercise 18 on pp. 73, 74.

LESSON 37.

The whole chapter on Nouns and the whole chapter on Adjectives (pp. 11–22), except Exercise 6 at the end.

EXERCISE 37.

Translate Exercises 2 (p. 11) and 4 (p. 17).

LESSON 38.

The whole chapter on Demonstrative, Interrogative, Relative, and Possessive Pronouns (pp. 30–34); the whole chapter on Indefinite Pronouns (pp. 84–87), except the long list on p. 86 and the Exercise at the end.

EXERCISE 38.

Translate Exercises 6 (p. 23) and 10 (p. 35).

LESSON 39.

The whole chapter on Personal Pronouns (pp. 36–44), except Exercise 11 at the end.

EXERCISE 39.

Translate Exercise 12 on pp. 45, 46.

LESSON 40.

The whole chapter on Augmentatives, Diminutives, and Numerals (pp. 23–28), except Exercise 7 at the end.

EXERCISE 40.

Translate Exercise 8 on p. 29.

LESSON 41.

The whole chapter on Conjunctions, Prepositions, and Adverbs (pp. 74–82), except the two long lists and Exercise 19 at the end.

EXERCISE 41.

Translate Exercise 20 on p. 84.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

PRONUNCIATION.

1. The Italian alphabet has the same letters as the English, except that *k*, *w*, *x*, and *y* do not occur in modern Italian.

2. The Italians distinguish seven vowels: *a*, close *e*, open *e*, *i*, close *o*, open *o*, *u*; each of which always has the same sound, no matter what may be its position in the word, and never tends, as do the English long vowels, to become a diphthong. Italian vowels are all pronounced very quickly; hence there is but little difference in quantity between accented and unaccented sounds. English-speaking students must carefully avoid drawling the accented and slighting the unaccented syllables; they should try to give to every Italian vowel about the length of *i* in "bitter."

A is nearly like *a* in "father": as *fava, canna, cassa, palla.*

E, close, is nearly like *a* in "fate": as *beve, vere, stelle, messe.*

E, open, may be formed by trying to pronounce *e* in "bell" with the mouth very wide open: as *bella, amena, fera, pensa.*

I is nearly like *ee* in "feet": as *miri, vini, fissi, spilli.*

O, close, is nearly like *o* in "mope": as *dopo, dove, bollo, sotto.*

O, open, is nearly like *aw* in "saw" pronounced with the mouth wide open: as *no, odi, poi, donna.*

U is nearly like *oo* in "boot": as *una, cura, nulla, ruppi.*

a. The letters *i* and *u* are sometimes used to represent consonant sounds (see **4**); but in formulating rules they are always counted as vowels.

3. As close and open vowels are not distinguished in spelling, some rules are necessary:—

(1) Unaccented *e* and *o* are always close: as *mare,* "sea"; *amo,* "I love."

(2) *E* and *o* are close in all monosyllables* ending in a consonant: as *con,* "with"; *non,* "not"; *per,* "for."

(3) In monosyllables* and oxytones† ending in a vowel, final *e* is close, final *o* is open: as *che,* "what"; *me,* "me"; *re,* "king"; *credè,* "he believed"; *perchè,* "why"; *do,* "I give"; *Po,* "Po"; *sarò,* "I shall be"; *andò,* "he went." Exceptions: final *e* is open in *è* = "is," *re* = "re," interjections (as *aimè,* "alas"; *chè,* "nonsense"), proper names (as *Noè,* "Noah"), and foreign words (as *caffè,* "coffee"); final *o* is close in *lo* and *o.*

(4) Accented *e* and *o* are always open in the groups *ie* and *uo*: as *piede,* "foot"; *fuoco,* "fire." *E* and *o* standing for *ie* and *uo* are open: as *ven* = *viene,* "he comes"; *cor* = *cuore,* "heart."

---

* Not including shortened forms of words that regularly have more than one syllable.

† Words accented on the last syllable.

(5) In words that have always formed a part of the spoken language, accented *e* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ē* or *ĭ*, open when it represents Latin *ĕ* or *æ*; accented *o* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ō* or *ŭ*, open when it represents Latin *ŏ* or *au*. In book words accented *e* and *o* are usually open.

In all cases not covered by the first three rules, the quality of *e* and *o* will be marked in this book, an acute accent (´) denoting the close, a circumflex (^) the open sound: as *avére*, "to have"; *méno*, "less"; *tiêne*, "he holds"; *liêto*, "happy"; *poêta*, "poet"; *óra*, "hour"; *mólto*, "much"; *buôno*, "good"; *pôco*, "little"; *môto*, "motion."

4. **B**, **f**, **m**, **p**, **q**, **v** are pronounced as in English.

C before *e* or *i* sounds like *ch* in "chin"; elsewhere it is always like English *k*: as *cima*, "top"; *cóme*, "how"; *dólce*, "sweet." **G** before *e* or *i* sounds like *g* in "gem"; elsewhere it is always like *g* in "go": as *gatto*, "cat"; *gênte*, "people"; *spingi*, "push."

a. A *cc* or a *gg* before *e* or *i* has merely the sound of *ch* in "chin" or *g* in "gem" prolonged: as *facce*, "faces"; *légge*, "law."

D, **l**, **n**, **t** are pronounced further forward in the mouth than in English; the tip of the tongue should touch the back of the upper front teeth: as *alto*, "high"; *dato*, "given"; *luna*, "moon"; *nudo*, "naked"; *tuôno*, "thunder."

H is always silent: as *ahi*, "oh!" *ha*, "he has."

I, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *y*: as *iêri*, "yesterday"; *paio*, "pair"; *più*, "more." In the groups *cia*, *cio*, *ciu*, *gia*, *gio*, *giu*, an unaccented *i* serves only to show that the *c* or *g* is soft: as *faccia*,

"face"; *guancia*, "cheek"; *ciò*, "that"; *giù*, "down"; *mangia*, "eat"; *raggio*, "ray."

J is merely another way of writing *i*.

N before a *q* or a hard *c* or *g* has the sound of English *ng*: as *banca* (*bang-ka*), "bank"; *dunque* (*dung-kwe*), "therefore"; *lungo* (*lung-go*), "long."

R is always rolled, the point of the tongue vibrating against the teeth: as *caro*, "dear"; *rósso*, "red"; *per*, "for." When *r* is double or followed by a consonant, the trill is prolonged: as *carro*, "cart"; *burro*, "butter"; *marróne*, "chestnut"; *carne*, "meat"; *pôrta*, "door."

S is generally pronounced nearly like English *s* in "see," but with a somewhat sharper sound: as *sô*, "I know"; *spillo*, "pin."

Initial *s* before a sonant (*b*, *d*, *g*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, *v*) has a sound intermediate between *s* and English *z*: as *sdrucciolare*, "to slip"; *slitta*, "sleigh."

A single *s* between vowels has, in most words, the sound of English *z*: as *caso*, "case"; *cáusa*, "cause"; *viso*, "face." But in the following cases it is pronounced like *s* in "see," "mason":—

a. In *annusare*, *ásino*, *casa*, *Chiusi*, *côsa*, *così*, *desidêrio*, *naso*, *parasito*, *péso*, *Pisa*, *pisêllo*, *pôsa*, *ripôso*, *riso*, *susina*, and their derivatives, and in some uncommon words.

b. After the prefixes *de-*, *di-*,* *pre-*, *pro-*, *re-*, *ri-*, *tra-**: as *desistere*, *diségno*, *presúmere*, *proseguire*, *reservare*, *risôlvere*, *trasudáre*.

c. In the adjective ending *-óso* and the adjective and substantive ending *-ése*: as *noióso*, "troublesome"; *inglése*, "English"; *mése*, "month." But in *cortése*, *francése*, *lucchése*, *marchése*, *paése*, *palése*, the *s* is like English *z*.

* Not to be confounded with *dis-*, *tras-*: *disonóre*, *trasandare*.

d. In the preterites and past participles of *chiêdere, chiúdere, nascóndere, pórre, ràdere, rídere, rimanére, rispóndere, ródere,* and all verbs in *-endere;* and in their compounds and derivatives: as *chiêsi, socchiuso, nascóse, rispósero, rasóio, rimase, corrispósi, rósero, accêsi, réso, scêsa.* Exceptions to this rule are *derídere,* verbs in *-clúdere,* and derivatives of *ródere.*

U, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *w*: as *buôno*, "good"; *guardare*, "to look"; *può*, "he can."

Z and **zz** are generally pronounced like a long and vigorous *ts*: as *alzare*, "to lift"; *azióne*, "action"; *prêzzo*, "price"; *zío*, "uncle."

In the following cases, however, *z* and *zz* sound like a prolonged *dz*:—

a. In *azzurro, dozzina, mêzzo, pranzo, ribrézzo, romanzo, zêlo,* and many less common words.

b. In verbs in *-izzare* (as *utilizzare*, "to utilize"); except *attizzare, dirizzare, guizzare, rizzare, stizzare,* and their compounds, and a few uncommon words.

5. The following combinations are to be noted:—

Ch (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *k*: as *fichi* (plural of *fico*, "fig"). **Sch** is like *sk*: as *schérzo*, "sport."

Gh (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *g* in "go": as *aghi* (plural of *ago*, "needle").

Gli (written **gl** if the following vowel be *i*) is nearly like English *lli* in "million": as *figlio*, "son"; *figli*, "sons." But in *Ánglia, geroglífico, glicerina, negligere* and its derivatives, and a few uncommon words borrowed from the Greek or Latin, *gl* is like English *gl*.

Gn is nearly like *ni* in "onion": as *ógni*, "every."

Qu is always like *kw*: as *quésto*, "this."

Sc before *e* and *i* is nearly like *sh* in "ship": as *uscire*, "to go out." Before all other letters it is pronounced *sk*: as *scuôla*, "school"; *schérno*, "contempt."

6. Every letter in Italian is distinctly and separately sounded; the only exceptions are *h*, silent *i* (see **4**), and the combinations mentioned in **5**. Ex.: *arte*, "art"; *firma*, "signature"; *furto*, "theft"; *giórno*, "day"; *vêrso*, "toward"; *andái*, "I went"; *áura*, "breeze"; *bugíe*, "lies"; *Eurôpa*, "Europe"; *miêi*, "my"; *paúra*, "fear"; *sentíi*, "I felt"; *suôi*, "his."

Where a double consonant is written, both letters must be sounded, the first at the end of the preceding, the second at the beginning of the following syllable: as *anno*, "year"; *babbo*, "father"; *fatto*, "done"; *mésso*, "put"; *quéllo*, "that." For *rr*, *zz*, and soft *cc* and *gg*, see **4**.

L, *m*, *n*, and *r*, when preceded by an accented vowel and followed by another consonant, are prolonged: as *alto* (*all-to*), "high"; *sempre* (*sêmm-pre*), "always"; *tanto* (*tann-to*), "so much"; *parte* (*parr-te*), "part."

7. The accent is nearly always the same as in Latin. In this book it will always be noted. Of the signs written here, students need use only the grave (`), which is placed on the last syllable of oxytones and on some monosyllables; Italian writers do not agree as to the use of the other marks; some use the acute, and not the grave, on final *e*.

8. Italian words are divided in such a way that, if possible, every syllable shall begin with a consonant: as *ta-volí-no*, "table"; *frat-tán-to*, "meanwhile"; *al-l'uô-mo*, "to the man"; *nar-rá-re*, "to relate"; *mêz-zo*, "half"; *các-cia*, "hunt"; *ôg-gi*, "to-day."

In the groups *s* + consonant, consonant + *r*, those mentioned in **5**, and *cl, fl, gl, pl*, both consonants belong to the following syllable. *I* = *y* and *u* = *w* go with the following vowel; *ái, áu, ei, eu, oi* are not separated. Ex.: *al-l' áu-ra, a-vrò, bi-só-gno, ca-stí-ghi, del-l' ác-qua, in-chiô-stro, miêi, mi-gliò-re, ri-flêt-te-re, te-á-tro, tuôi.*

ARTICLES.

9. The article is not declined, but it agrees with its substantive in gender and number.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

10. Masculine:—

a. Sing. *il*, pl. *i*, before a word beginning with any consonant except *s* impure * and *z*.

b. Sing. *lo*, pl. *gli*, before a vowel or *s* impure or *z*.†

Before a vowel *lo* becomes *l'*; *gli* becomes *gl'* before *i*.

Ex.: *Il pádre*, the father; *i pádri*, the fathers.
Lo stésso pádre, the same father.
Lo scíame, the swarm; *gli scíami*, the swarms.
Lo zío, the uncle; *gli zíi*, the uncles.
L' uómo, the man; *gl' insétti*, the insects.

11. Feminine:—

Sing. *la*, pl. *le*.

Before a vowel *la* becomes *l'*; *le* becomes *l'* before *e*.

Ex.: *La mádre*, the mother; *le mádri*, the mothers.
L' óra, the hour; *le óre*, the hours; *l' érbe*, the herbs.

---

* That is, *s* followed by another consonant.

† *Li* is sometimes used for *gli*. Some writers use *il, i* before *s* and before *sce-* or *sci-*. In poetry *lo* is often used for *il*.

12. When the definite article is preceded by one of the prepositions *di, da, a, in, con, su, per*, the article and preposition are generally contracted into one word, as shown in the following table (*con, per* are often uncontracted):—

	IL	I	LO	GLI	LA	LE	L'
Di, of	*del*	*dêi* or *de'*	*dêllo*	*dêgli*	*dêlla*	*dêlle*	*dell'*
Da, by	*dal*	*dâi* or *da'*	*dâllo*	*dâgli*	*dâlla*	*dâlle*	*dall'*
A, to	*al*	*ai* or *a'*	*állo*	*ágli*	*álla*	*álle*	*all'*
In, in	*nel*	*nêi* or *ne'*	*nêllo*	*nêgli*	*nêlla*	*nêlle*	*nell'*
Con, with	*col*	*cói* or *co'*	*cóllo*	*cógli*	*cólla*	*cólle*	*coll'*
Su, on	*sul*	*súi* or *su'*	*súllo*	*súgli*	*súlla*	*súlle*	*sull'*
Per, for	*pel*	*pêi* or *pe'*	*per lo*	*per gli*	*per la*	*per le*	*per l'*

Ex.: *Del pâdre*, of the father; *dâi pâdri*, by the fathers.
Állo spêcchio, to the mirror; *négli spêcchi*, in the mirrors.
Cólla mâdre, with the mother; *cólle mâdri*, with the mothers.
Sull' uômo, on the man; *per gli uômini*, for the men.

a. The word "some" is frequently rendered in Italian by *di* with the definite article. This is called the partitive genitive.

Ex.: *Dâtemi del vino*, give me some wine.
Dêlle bêlle côse, some fine things.

13. In the following cases the definite article is used in Italian, though not in English:—

a. Before the possessive pronouns: as *il nôstro giardino*, "our garden"; *i suôi fratêlli*, "his brothers." When, however, the possessive qualifies an otherwise unmodified noun in the singular expressing relationship, the article is generally omitted: as *mia mâdre*, "my mother." For a fuller statement see **45**, *a.*

b. Before an abstract noun or one denoting a whole class, unless the sense is partitive.

Ex.: *L'uômo propône*, man proposes.
I fiôri náscono dal séme, flowers spring from the seed.
La môrte è il peggióre déi máli, death is the worst of evils.

c. Before a noun and adjective used either in a specific or in a general (but not in a partitive) sense.

Ex.: *L'ánno scórso*, last year (*i. e.*, *the* last year).
Il pôvero Luígi non viêne, (the) poor Lewis doesn't come.
Gli uômini buôni, good men (*i. e.*, *all* good men).

d. Before a title followed by a proper name: as *la regína Vittôria*, "Queen Victoria"; *il signór Brúni*, "Mr. Brown." It is not used, however, before *Don*, *Messêr*, and *Ser*.

e. Before family names; often before given names of women; occasionally before given names of well-known men.

Ex.: *Il Biánchi è môrto*, White is dead; *la Pátti cánta*, Patti sings.
Conósco l' Olívia, I know Olivia; *Dánte* or *il Dánte*, Dante.

f. Before names of countries and continents: as *la Svízzera*, "Switzerland"; *all' Itália*, "to Italy"; *per l' Eurôpa*, "for Europe." But the article is omitted after *in* in phrases that denote going to or dwelling in a country; and often after *di* or *in* when the preposition with the name of a country is equivalent to an adjective of nationality: as *vádo in Germánia*, "I go to Germany"; *rimángo in Fráncia*, "I remain in France"; *la regína d' Inghiltêrra*, "the queen of England"; *il víno di Spágna*, "the wine of Spain"; *il teátro in Itália*, "the drama in Italy."

In all the above cases (beginning with **13**, *a*) the article, unless it would be employed in English, is omitted when the noun is used as a vocative or is modified by a numeral or a pronominal adjective. It is often omitted in lists.

Ex.: *Quésta súa ôpera*, this work of his.
Signóra Mónti, cóme sta, Mrs. Monti, how do you do?
Itália, ti rivédo, Italy, I see thee again.
Féde, speránza, caritá, faith, hope, and charity.

Viêni, amico mio, come, my friend.
Ha parécchi vizi, he has several bad habits.
Dúe bellíssimi cáni, two very fine dogs.

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

14. Masculine:—

a. *Un* before a vowel or any consonant except *s* impure and *z*.
b. *Úno* before *s* impure or *z*. *

Ex.: *Un pádre*, a father; *un uômo*, a man.
Un anêllo, a ring; *úno spêcchio*, a mirror.
Úno sciáme, a swarm; *úno zio*, an uncle.

15. Feminine:—

Úna, which becomes *un'* before a vowel.

Ex.: *Úna mádre*, a mother; *un' óra*, an hour.

16. In the following cases the indefinite article, though expressed in English, is omitted in Italian:—

a. Before a predicate noun expressing occupation, rank, or nationality, and not accompanied by an adjective.

Ex.: *Égli è poêta*, he is a poet; *sóno marchêse*, I am a marquis.
Siête italiáno, you are an Italian.

b. Generally before an antecedent (of a relative clause) used in apposition to a preceding noun modified by a definite article or a demonstrative pronoun.

Ex.: *L' Árno, fiúme che travêrsa Firênze*, the Arno, a river which traverses Florence.

c. After *da* meaning "as," "like," or "for." See **79**, *g*.

Ex.: *Da uômo*, like a man.

* Some writers use *un* before *z* and before *sce-* or *sci-*.

EXERCISE 1.

La párte più álta del nôstro côrpo è il cápo. Il cápo è attaccáto
highest *is* *is attached*
al côllo, e il côllo è attaccáto al trónco. La párte davánti del
front
cápo si chiáma víso. Nel víso ci sóno la frónte, gli ôcchi, il
is-called *there are* *eyes*
náso, la bócca, il ménto. Cógli ôcchi si védono le côse. Col
we-see *things*
náso si sêntono gli odóri. Cólla bócca si mángia, si béve, si
we-smell *odors* *we-eat* *we-drink* *we-*
respíra. Respiráre è mandáre l' ária giù nel pêtto, e pôi riman-
breathe
dárla fuôri. Nói respiriámo l' ária. Leváte un pésce dall' ácqua,
it *We* *breathe* *Take*
muôre: leváte l' ária a nói, e nói morrémo.
it-dies *take* *from us* *shall-die.*

EXERCISE 2.

Mr. Rossi is a merchant. Leaving Italy, he-went-away last
è *Lasciándo* *partì*
year to France, a country which he-wished to-visit with his brother
per *volèva* *visitâre*
and a friend of the family. But he-returned to Italy the same
tornò *in*
month, saying: "Travelling[1] bores-me. Another time I-shall-make
dicêndo *viaggiâre* (m.) *mi sécca* *Un' áltra* *farò*
a study of the customs of France. Paris is a big city; we-have-
costúmi (m. pl.) *grânde* *vi abbiâmo*
seen some[2] fine things; but I-prefer the land of Garibaldi and
vedúto *bêlle côse* (f. pl.) *mi piâce più*
of King Victor Emmanuel."

[1] See **13**, *b*. [2] See **12**, *a*.

NOUNS.

17. Italian nouns are not declined. Possession is denoted by the preposition *di:* as *lo spêcchio di mío pádre*, "my father's looking-glass."

GENDER.

18. There are no neuter nouns in Italian.*

Nouns denoting males and females keep their natural gender: except *guída*, "guide"; *guárdia*, "guard"; *persóna*, "person"; *sentinêlla*, "sentinel"; *spía*, "spy"; *vedétta*, "scout"; which are feminine.

Ex.: *Il fratèllo*, the brother; *mía sorèlla*, my sister.
Il poèta, the poet; *la poetéssa*, the poetess.
Úna spía, a spy; *la nóstra guída*, our guide.

19. Of nouns denoting objects without sex some are masculine, some feminine. Their gender can often be determined by the final letter. All Italian nouns end in *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, or *u*: †—

a. Those ending in *a* are feminine; except *colêra*, "cholera," *qualcôsa*, "something," Greek neuters in *-ma*,‡ many geographical names, and a few other words, mostly foreign.

Ex.: *Un' óra*, an hour; *un telegrámma*, a telegram.
Il Canadà, Canada; *il sofà*, the sofa.

b. Of those ending in *e* and *i* some are masculine, some feminine. All ending in *-zióne*, *-gióne*, or *-údine* are feminine.

Ex.: *Il fiúme*, the river; *la páce*, peace.
Un dì, a day; *una metrópoli*, a metropolis.
La ragióne, the reason; *la servitúdine*, service.

c. Those ending in *o* are masculine; except *máno*, "hand."

Ex.: *Il ginócchio*, the knee; *la máno*, the hand.

---

* Latin neuters become masculine in Italian; masculines and feminines retain their Latin gender. This rule has very few exceptions.

† A few foreign nouns used in Italian end in a consonant: as *lápis*, "pencil" (*i lápis*, "the pencils"). Nouns in *-o* or *-e* often drop that vowel if the preceding consonant is *l*, *n*, or *r*: as *cáne*=*can*, "dog."

‡ Mostly scientific terms.

d. Those ending in *u* are feminine; except *soprappiù*, "surplus," and a few foreign words.

Ex.: *La virtù*, virtue; *il bambù*, bamboo.

20. Any other part of speech (except an adjective*) used as a noun must be masculine.

Ex.: *Il viaggiáre*, travelling.

21. Masculine names of trees in *o* or *e* have a feminine form in *a* or *e* respectively, denoting their fruit; but *il dáttero*, "date," *il fíco*, "fig," *il limóne*, "lemon," *il pómo*, "apple," are always the same, whether denoting the tree or the fruit.

Ex.: *Un susíno*, a plum-tree; *una susína*, a plum.
Il nóce, the walnut-tree; *la nóce*, the walnut.
Quésti fíchi, these fig-trees, these figs.

NUMBER.

22. Feminines in unaccented *a* form their plural by changing *a* into *e*.

Ex.: *La stráda*, the street; *le stráde*, the streets.
Una bugía, a lie; *le bugíe*, lies.

a. Feminines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-che* and *-ghe* respectively (the *h* being inserted merely to indicate that the *c* and *g* keep their hard sound).

Ex.: *Un' ôca*, a goose; *mólte ôche*, many geese.
La bottéga, the shop; *parécchie bottéghe*, several shops.

---

* Adjectives of course have the gender of the nouns they represent.

b. Nouns in unaccented *-cia* and *-gia* form their plural in *-ce* and *-ge* respectively.*

Ex.: *La gudncia*, the cheek; *le guánce*, the cheeks.
Úna ciliègia, a cherry; *tánte ciliège*, so many cherries.

23. Masculines in unaccented *a* and all nouns in unaccented *o* and *e* (not *ie*) form their plural in *i*.†

Ex.: *Un poèta*, a poet; *dúe poèti*, two poets.
Lo zío, the uncle; *gli zii*, the uncles.
La máno, the hand; *le míe máni*, my hands.
Un mése, a month; *tre mési*, three months.
La cornice, the frame; *quáttro cornici*, four frames.

a. Masculines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-chi* and *-ghi* respectively.

Ex.: *Il monárca*, the monarch; *i monárchi*, the monarchs.
Il collèga, the colleague; *i collèghi*, the colleagues.

b. Nouns in unaccented *-io* form their plural by changing *-io* to *-i* (often written *ì*, *j*, or *ii*).

Ex.: *Lo spècchio*, the mirror; *gli spècchi*, the mirrors.
Il ciliègio, the cherry-tree; *i ciliègi*, the cherry-trees.

c. Nouns in *-go* form their plural in *-ghi*. Nouns in *-co* form their plural in *-chi* if the penult is accented, otherwise in *-ci*.

Ex.: *Il castígo*, the punishment; *i castíghi*, the punishments.
Un catálogo, a catalogue; *dúe catáloghi*, two catalogues.
Il fico, the fig; *cinque fichi*, five figs.
Antico, ancient; *gli antichi*, the ancients.
Un mèdico, a doctor; *sèi mèdici*, six doctors.

This rule has a number of exceptions. In the following lists, words whose irregular plural is rare are omitted.

---

* *Provincia* has *provincie*. In general borrowed words and words whose plural is necessarily very rare keep the *i*: *audácia*, *audácie*.

† In old Italian and in poetry words in *-ello* and *-ale* often form their plural in *-egli* or *-ei*, *-agli* or *-ai*: *capéllo*, *capéi*.

(1) Compound nouns in *-logo* denoting persons engaged in the sciences, and all compound nouns in *-fago* form their plural in *-gi*.*

Ex.: *Il fisiòlogo*, the physiologist; *i fisiòlogi*, physiologists.
Antropòfago, cannibal; *antropòfagi*, cannibals.

(2) The following words form their plural in *-ci*, although the penult is accented: —

amíco	*grêco*	inimíco	nemíco	pôrco †

Grêco has a regular plural in the expression *vini grêchi*.

(3) The following words form their plural in *-chi*, although the penult is unaccented: —

ábbaco	*fármaco*	lástrico	rammárico	stráscico
acrôstico	índaco	mánico	rísico	tôssico
cárico ‡	intônaco	párroco	sciático	tráffico
diméntico ‡	intrínseco	pízzico	stômaco	válico §

Acrôstico and *fármaco* have also regular plurals.

d. Some masculines in *o* have an irregular plural in *a*; this plural is feminine. They are: *centinàio*, "hundred"; *migliàio*, "thousand"; *miglio*, "mile"; *pàio*, "pair"; *uôvo*, "egg."

Many masculines in *o* have this irregular feminine plural in *a* besides the regular masculine plural in *i*. The most common are: *bràccio*, "arm"; *dìto*, "finger"; *frútto*, "fruit"; *ginòcchio*, "knee"; *grìdo*, "shout"; *làbbro*, "lip"; *légno*, "wood"; *mèmbro*, "member"; *múro*, "wall"; *orécchio*, "ear"; *òsso*, "bone."

---

*. Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *flemmagògo*, *idragògo*, *metallúrgo*, *úrgo* (also reg. plur.), *sortílego*. "Magicians" = *màghi*, "magi" = *màgi*.

† Likewise the rare words: *aprico*, *lombrico* (also reg.), *uvamico*, *vico*.

‡ Likewise its compounds.

§ Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *fildccico*, *màntaco* (also reg.), *ostàtico*, *sfildccico*, *stàtico* (noun), *úncico*.

Ex.: *Un pâio*, a pair; *sètte pâia*, seven pairs.
Il mío brâccio, my arm; *le túe brâccia*, thy arms.
Il lâbbro, the lip; *le lâbbra* or *i lâbbri*, the lips.
Un ôsso, a bone; *le ôssa* or *gli ôssi*, the bones.

Brâccio, ginôcchio, lâbbro, and *orécchio* nearly always have the irregular plural when denoting the two arms, knees, lips, or ears belonging to the same body.

24. All monosyllables, and all nouns ending in *i, ie, u,* an accented vowel, or a consonant, are invariable.

Ex.: *Il re*, the king; *i re*, the kings.
Il brîndisi, the toast; *i brîndisi*, the toasts.
Úna spècie, a kind; *ôtto spècie*, eight kinds.
La virtù, virtue; *le virtù*, the virtues.
Úna città, a city; *diêci città*, ten cities.

25. The following nouns have irregular plurals: *búe*, "ox," pl. *buôi; dío*, "god," pl. *dêi*; móglie*, "wife," pl. *mógli; uômo*, "man," pl. *uômini.*

EXERCISE 3.

Gli uccêlli, le farfálle, i pésci, il cáne, il mício, le lucêrtole sóno[1] tútti animáli. Il gátto e il cáne sóno[1] animáli che hánno[2] quáttro gámbe, hánno[3] quáttro piêdi, e però si chiámano[4] quadrúpedi. Il leóne è[1] il più bêllo e il più maestóso déi quadrúpedi. Gli uccêlli hánno[2] dúe zámpe; ed hánno[3] le áli e con le áli vólano.[5] Ánche le farfálle hánno[2] le áli, ánche le ápi hánno[2] le áli, e vólano.[5] Le mósche, le zanzáre, le vêspe, e pôi mólti áltri animalíni, símili a quésti, si chiámano[4] insêtti. Gli uccêlli e gl' insêtti náscono[6] dálle uôva. Tútti quésti animáli vívono[7] in mêzzo all' ária. I pésci vívono[7] in mêzzo all' ácqua. I pésci non hánno[2] gámbe; hánno[3] dálle párti quélle alettíne; e con quéste píccole

* The article used with *dêi* is *gli : gli dêi.*

alétte e con la códa nuôtano[8] e guizzan[9] via nell' ácqua, lêsti lêsti cóme un lámpo. Quélle alétte si chiámano[4] pínne. Le lucêrtole strísciano[11] su' múri, hánno[3] délle zampíne, ma rasênti rasênti al côrpo, e quándo si muôvono[10] ánche súlla têrra, strísciano.[11] Le sêrpi non hánno[2] gámbe; e quésti animáli che non hánno[2] gámbe e che strísciano[11] sulla têrra, cóme le lucêrtole e le sêrpi, si chiáman[4] rêttili.

[1] *È* = is; *sóno* = are. [2] Have. [3] They have. [4] *Si chiámano* = are called. [5] They fly. [6] Are born. [7] Live. [8] They swim. [9] Dart. [10] *Si muôvono* = they move. [11] Crawl, they crawl.

EXERCISE 4.[1]

Mignonettes are[2] born from the seed. The seed, placed under ground, has[3] sprouted; from one side it-has[3] put-out[4] shoots, which have-spread-out[5] through[6] the ground, and from one side it-has[3] sent forth the stalk, the little-branches,[7] the leaves, and[9] the flowers. Like mignonettes,[8] many other[26] plants, herbs, and[9] flowers spring[10] from the seed. Flowers, herbs, grain, and trees are-called[11] vegetables. Vegetables have[3] roots, trunk, branches, twigs, leaves, flowers, and[9] fruit. Plants first produce[12] the flower and then the fruit. The trunk or stalk of plants is[2] that[13] which rests[14] on the roots and[15] comes[16] out from the ground;[17] it-is-covered[18] with[19] branches and with[19] leaves. Of the stalk of plants, — for instance, of the trunk of trees, — we-make-use[20] for many purposes; we-make[21] furniture, doors, windows, the beams that support[22] ceilings, ships, carriages, and[9] cars. The branches of trees are-burned,[23] and give-us[24] fire. Vegetables in-order-to[25] live have[3] need of earth, of water, and[9] of light.

[1] See **13**, *b*. [2] Is = *è*; are = *sóno*. [3] Has, it has = *ha*; have = *hanno*. [4] *Mésso*. [5] *Si sóno distêse*. [6] *Fra*. [7] *Ramicêlli*. [8] Insert "and so." [9] Omit. [10] *Náscono*. [11] *Si chiámano*. [12] *Fánno*. [13] *Quéllo*. [14] *Pôsa*. [15] Insert "which." [16] *Viêne*. [17] Insert "and." [18] *Si ricuôpre*. [19] *Di*. [20] *Ci servíamo*. [21] *Facciámo*. [22] *Règgono*. [23] *Si brúciano*. [24] *Ci dánno*. [25] *Per*. [26] Many other = *mólte áltre*.

ADJECTIVES.

26. Adjectives agree with their substantives in gender and number. An adjective modifying two nouns of different genders is generally put in the masculine plural.

Ex.: *Il gátto è púlito*, the cat is neat; *stánze púlite*, neat rooms.
Úna cása e un giardíno bellíni, a pretty house and garden.

27. Numeral and pronominal adjectives, *bêllo*, *brávo*, *buôno*, and the commonest adjectives of size and quantity, precede their nouns; adjectives of nationality, shape, and material follow. Adjectives whose use is prompted by emotion, and adjectives used in a figurative sense, generally precede. Otherwise, of the noun and adjective, the one that contains the chief idea comes last.

Ex.: *Tróppo páne*, too much bread; *le grándi città*, great cities.
Quésta pálla rotónda, this round ball; *due cáni*, two dogs.
La buóna mádre, the good mother; *póver' uómo*, poor man!
La vóstra gentilíssima léttera, your kind *letter*.
È un uómo gentilíssimo, he is a *kind* man.

GENDER AND NUMBER

28. Adjectives ending in *o* are masculine, and form their feminine in *a*. Adjectives in *e* are invariable in the singular.

Ex.: *Buóno stivalétto*, good boot; *buóna scárpa*, good shoe.
Ragázzo felíce, happy boy; *ragázza felíce*, happy girl.

29. Adjectives form their plural in the same way as nouns (see **22**, **23**).

Ex.: *Séi buóni cassettóni*, six good bureaus; *ótto buóne séggiole*, eight good chairs.
Dúe uómini felíci, two happy men; *tre dónne felíci*, three happy women.

a. *Parécchi*, "several," has for its feminine *parécchie*.

b. *Quálche*, "some," is used only in the singular, even when the meaning is plural: as *quálche vôlta*, "sometimes."

c. When preceding a noun, *bêllo*, "beautiful," has forms similar to those of the definite article; and *Sánto*, "Saint," and *gránde*, "great," have corresponding forms in the singular.* *Buôno*, "good," when preceding its noun, has a singular similar to the indefinite article. The masculine of these words (which is the only irregular part) is, therefore, as follows: —

Before any consonant except *s* impure or *z*: *bel*, *San*, *gran*, *buon*; pl. *bêi*, *Sánti*, *grándi*, *buôni*.

Before *s* impure or *z*: *bêllo*, *Sánto*, *gránde*, *buôno*; pl. *bêgli*, *Sánti*, *grándi*, *buôni*.

Before a vowel: *bell'*, *Sant'*, *grand'*, *buon*; pl. *bêgli*, *Sánti*, *grándi*, *buôni*.

When used *after* a noun or in the predicate these adjectives have their full forms (*bêllo*, *bêlli*, *Sánto*, *Sánti*, *gránde*, *grándi*, *buôno*, *buôni*).

Ex.: *Un bel quádro*, a fine picture; *dúe bêi lêtti*, two fine beds.
Un bêllo scaffále, a fine bookcase; *quáttro bêgli stivâli*, four fine boots.
Un bell'ándito, a fine hall; *mólti bêgli orolôgi*, many fine clocks.
Una bêlla stúfa, a fine stove; *parécchie bêlle tênde*, several fine curtains.
Il paládzzo è bêllo, the palace is fine; *le sêdie son bêlle*, the chairs are beautiful.
San Piêtro, *Sánto Stêfano e Sant' Antônio*, St. Peter, St. Stephen, and St. Anthony.
Un gran fuôco, a big fire; *grándi camini*, big fire-places.

---

* *Gran* is, moreover, often used in the fem. sing. (for *gránde*), and sometimes in the plur. (for *grándi*); it is regularly used before fem. sing. nouns in *-a*, and in the expression *úna gran bêlla* (or *brútta*) *côsa*.

Il grânde scaldîno, the big foot-warmer; *diêci grândi spîlli*, ten big pins.

Un grânde sciâme, a great swarm; *il grânde zîpolo*, the large bung.

Un grand' armâdio, a big wardrobe; *vênti grândi âlberi*, twenty big trees.

Ûna grânde câmera, a large bedroom; *cinque grândi finêstre*, five big windows.

Il salôtto è môlto grânde, the parlor is very large.

Un buon lûme, a good lamp; *buôni fiammîferi*, good matches.

Il buôno sgabêllo, the good stool; *nôve buôni scolâri*, nine good pupils.

Il buon ôlio, the good oil; *parécchi buôni âghi*, several good needles.

Ûna buôna cucîna, a good kitchen; *le buône candêle*, the good candles.

Il bambîno è buôno, the child is good.

30. Any adjective of either gender or either number may be used as a noun.

Ex.: *I buôni*, the good; *la bêlla*, the beautiful woman.

COMPARISON.

31. All Italian adjectives form their comparative by prefixing *più* "more," and their superlative by prefixing the definite article to the comparative. When the superlative immediately follows the noun, this article is omitted.

Ex.: *Bêllo*, beautiful; *più bêllo*, more beautiful; *il più bêllo*, the most beautiful.

Lûngo, long; *più lûngo*, longer; *il più lûngo*, the longest.

La vîa più côrta, the shortest way.

a. The following adjectives have an irregular comparison in addition to the regular one: —

Âlto, high; *più âlto* or *superiôre*; *il più âlto* or *il superiôre*.

Bâsso, low; *più bâsso* or *inferiôre*; *il più bâsso* or *l' inferiôre*.

Buòno, good; *più buòno* or *migliòre*;* *il più buòno* or *il migliòre*.

Cattivo, bad; *più cattivo* or *peggiòre*;* *il più cattivo* or *il peggiòre*.

Grànde, big; *più grànde* or *maggiòre*; *il più grànde* or *il maggiòre*.

Piccolo, small; *più piccolo* or *minòre*; *il più piccolo* or *il minòre*.

"Higher" and "lower" are commonly rendered by *più àlto* and *più bàsso*; *superiòre* and *inferiòre* generally mean "superior" and "inferior." *Migliòre* and *peggiòre* are more used than *più buòno* and *più cattivo*, which have the same sense. "Larger" and "smaller" are generally *più grànde* and *più piccolo*; *maggiòre* and *minòre* usually signify "older" and "younger."

Ex.: *Noi sìdmo migliòri di lòro*, we are better than they.
Quèsta sàla da prànzo è la più grànde, this dining-room is the biggest.
Pièlro è il fratèllo minòre, Peter is the youngest brother.

32. The adverb "less" is expressed by *méno*, "least" by *il méno*. "As . . . as," "so . . . as" are *tànto . . . quànto*, *tànto . . . còme*, *così . . . còme*, or simply *quànto*.

Ex.: *Quèlla stànza è la mèno bellìna*, that room is the least pretty.
Pàolo non è tànto buòno còme Robèrto, Paul isn't so good as Robert.
Giovànni è àlto quànto Filippo, John is as tall as Philip.

33. "Than" is *che*.

Ex.: *L' albèrgo è più grànde che bèllo*, the hotel is bigger than it is beautiful.

But before a noun, a pronoun, or a numeral "than" is rendered by the preposition *di* (see **12**). If, however, this "than" is preceded by a word meaning "rather," it is translated *che*.

* The *adverbs* "better" and "worse" are *mèglio* and *pèggio*.

Ex.: *Riccárdo è peggióre di me*, Richard is worse than I.
Vói siête più ricchi di nói, you are richer than we.
Méno di cínque, less than five.
Piuttôsto la môrte che il disonóre, rather death than dishonor.

Before an inflected verb "than" is *che non* or *di quel che*. If the verb has a negative subject, "than" is *che*.

Ex.: *Abbáia più che non môrde*, he barks more than he bites.
Prométto méno di quel che do, I promise less than I give.
Più liêto che nessún fíglio lo êra státo, happier than any son had been.

34. "The more . . . the more," "the less . . . the less" are *più . . . più, méno . . . méno.* "More" and "less" after a number are *di più, di méno.* In speaking of time, "longer" after a negative is *più.*

Ex.: *Più stúdio, più impáro*, the more I study, the more I learn
Trênta giórni di méno, thirty days less.
Non lo vediámo più, we see him no longer.

EXERCISE 5.

Il sóle è[1] un glôbo grandíssimo e sêmpre infocáto: ésso è[1] gránde óltre un milióne di vôlte più délla têrra; e díre[2] che a' nôstri ôcchi apparísce[3] tánto più píccolo! Ánche la lúna, che splênde[4] duránte la nôtte, è[1] rotónda, ma è[1] mólto più píccola délla têrra, e gíra[5] intórno a quésta[6] continovaménte. La lúna non ha[1] lúce da sè, ma la ricéve[7] dal sóle. Êcco[8] perchè la lúna óra la vediámo[9] e óra non la vediámo[9] più, óra ne vediámo[9] mêzza, óra uno spícchio, óra un po' più, óra un po' méno, secóndo che di éssa ci si presênta[10] úna párte maggióre o minóre illuminnáta dal sóle. Le stélle sóno[1] tútti quéi[11] púnti luminósi che vediámo[9] brilláre di[12] nôtte nel firmaménto. Non crediáte,[13] però, che le stélle síano[1] píccole cóme nói le vediámo[9]: ci páiono[14] così piccíne per la smisuráta distánza che córre[15] da lóro a nói; ma le stélle sóno[1] grandíssime, e ce n' è di quélle[16] che sóno[1] in-

finitaménte più grándi del sóle. Gli è[1] che il sóle è[1] méno lontáno di ésse dálla têrra che nói abitiámo.[17]

[1] *È* = is; *sóno, stano* (subj.) = are; *ha* = has. [2] To think. [3] It seems. [4] Shines. [5] Turns. [6] It. [7] *La ricève* = receives it. [8] That is. [9] *Vediámo* = we see; *la vediámo* = we see it; *le vediámo* = we see them; *ne vediámo* = we see of it. [10] *Ci si presênta* = there presents itself to us. [11] Those. [12] At. [13] *Non crediáte* = do not think. [14] *Ci pdiono* = they seem to us. [15] Intervenes. [16] *Ce n' è di quélle* = there are some. [17] Inhabit.

EXERCISE 6.

The moon is[1] in the middle of[2] the sky. The moon is[1] round; it-looks[3] perfectly round like a melon. And it-looks,[3] too, as big as a melon. The moon seems[4] little because it-is[1] far, far from us who are[5] on the earth. The moon renders[6] a great service to men: because when everything is[1] dark, it[7] illumines[8] with its beautiful light the earth which we-inhabit.[9] The stars are[10] larger than the moon, but to-look-at-them[11] they-seem[12] smaller, because they-are[10] so-much[13] further than the moon. The most beautiful,[14] the most intense[14] light comes[15] from the sun.

[1] *È.* [2] *A.* [3] *Par* or *pâre.* [4] *Si vède.* [5] *Siámo.* [6] *Fa.* [7] *Éssa.* [8] *Rischiára.* [9] *Abitiámo.* [10] *Sóno.* [11] *A vedêrle.* [12] *Pdiono.* [13] *Tânto.* [14] Both adjectives follow the noun. [15] *Viêne.*

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS.

AUGMENTATIVE AND DIMINUTIVE ENDINGS.

35. Instead of a word expressing size or quality the Italians often use a suffix. This suffix may be added to a noun, an adjective, or an adverb. When added to an adjective, and generally when added to a noun, it takes the gender of the word to which it is affixed: occasionally,

however, a suffix with masculine termination is added to a feminine noun, which thereby becomes masculine. A word loses its final vowel before a suffix; but the preceding consonant, if it be *c* or *g*, must keep its former quality: as *Cárlo* + *íno* = *Carlíno*, *vóce* + *óne* = *vocióne*, *pôco* + *íno* = *pochíno*, *adágio* + *íno* = *adagíno*.

a. The commonest ending is *-íssimo* (fem. *-íssima*), "very," which in general is added only to adjectives and adverbs. Adverbs in *-ménte* add the *-íssima* before the *-ménte* (see **85**). Any adjective may take it, and it is very often used in cases where it would be entirely superfluous in English.

Ex.: *Lárgo*, wide; *larghíssimo*, very wide.
Bêne, well; *benissimo*, very well.
Grânde, big; *grandíssimo*, very big.
Fa un têmpo bellíssimo, it's beautiful weather.
Bellissimamênte, very beautifully.

b. The principal suffix denoting bigness is *-óne;* it is always masculine, but has a rare feminine form, *-óna*.

Ex.: *Líbro*, book; *librône*, big book.
Cása, house; *casône*, large house.
Bôccia, decanter; *boccióna*, big decanter.

c. The most important suffixes denoting smallness are *-íno*, *-cíno*, *-icíno*, *-iccíno*, *-étto*, *-êllo*, *-cêllo*, *-icêllo*, *-arêllo*, *-erêllo*, *-ôtto*, *-úccio*, *-úzzo*, *-uôlo*, with their fem. *-ína*, etc. These endings, especially *-úccio*, are often used to express affection; some of them may be used to express pity or contempt. *Ôtto* sometimes means "somewhat large" instead of "small."

Ex.: *Sorêlla*, sister; *sorellína*, little sister.
Bêllo, beautiful; *bellíno*, pretty.
Brútto, ugly; *bruttíno*, rather ugly.
Piázza, square; *piazzétta*, little square.
Giôrgio, George; *Giorgétto*, Georgie.

Campâna, bell; *campanêllo*, little bell.
Âquila, eagle; *aquilôtto*, eaglet.
Câsa, house; *casôtta*, rather large house.
Giovânni, John; *Giovannúccio*, dear little Johnny.
Pâzzo, mad; *pazzarêlla*, poor mad woman.
Pôvero, poor; *poverîni*, poor things!

d. The ending *-áccio* denotes worthlessness.

Ex.: *Rôba*, stuff, goods; *robâccia*, trash.
Têmpo, weather; *tempâccio*, nasty weather.
Alfrêdo, Alfred; *Alfredâccio*, naughty Alfred.

36. Of the endings added to nouns *-íno* is by far the most common; the only ones that are freely used to form new compounds are *-íno*, "little," *-óne*, "great," *-úccio*, "dear," and *-áccio*, "bad." In very many cases endings lose their character of independent suffixes, and become inseparable parts of certain words, whose meanings they often change: as *scâla*, "stairway"; *scalîno*, "stair"; *scalétto*, "ladder." Some suffixes (as *-uôlo*) are rarely used except in this way. Others (as *-cíno*, *-icíno*, *-êllo*, *-cêllo*, *-icêllo*, *-arêllo*, *-erêllo*) cannot be attached to any word at pleasure, their use being determined by precedent or euphony.

37. Sometimes several suffixes are added at once to the same word: as *ládro*, "thief"; *ladróne*, "terrible thief"; *ladroncêllo*, "terrible little thief."

NUMERALS.

38. The cardinal numerals are:—

1, *úno.*	5, *cinque.*	9, *nôve.*	13, *trédici.*
2, *dúe.*	6, *sêi.*	10, *diêci.*	14, *quattórdici.*
3, *tre.*	7, *sêtte.*	11, *úndici.*	15, *quíndici.*
4, *quáttro.*	8, *ôtto.*	12, *dódici.*	16, *sédici.*

17, *diciasêtte.*	26, *ventisêi.*	50, *cinquánta.*	125, *cento ventícinque.*
18, *diciôtto.*	27, *ventisêtte.*	60, *sessánta.*	200, *dugênto* or *duecênto.*
19, *diciannôve.*	28, *ventôtto* or *vent' ôtto.*	70, *settánta.*	250, *dugênto cinquánta.*
20, *vênti.*	29, *ventinôve.*	80, *ottánta.*	300, *trecênto.*
21, *ventúno* or *vent' úno.*	30, *trênta.*	90, *novánta.*	400, *quattrocênto.*
22, *ventidúe.*	31, *trentúno* or *trent' úno.*	100, *cênto.*	1000, *mille.*
23, *ventitrè.*		101, *centúno* or *cent' úno.*	2000, *dúe mila.*
24, *ventiquáttro.*	32, *trentadúe.*	105, *centocínque.*	
25, *venticínque.*	40, *quaránta.*	115, *centoquíndici.*	

Úno has a feminine *úna;* when used *adjectively* it has the same forms as the indefinite article; so also *ventúno*, etc. The plural of *mílle* is *míla.* "A million" is *un miliône* or *milliône*, of which the plural is *miliôni* or *milliôni.*

(1) No conjunction is used between the different parts of a number: as *dugênto quaránta*, "two hundred and forty." No indefinite article is used before *cênto* and *mílle:* as *cênto líbri*, "a hundred books."

(2) *Cênto, dugênto*, etc., when followed by another numeral of more than two syllables may lose the final syllable *-to:* as *seicênto cinquánta* or *seicencinquánta*, "six hundred and fifty."

(3) "Eleven hundred," "twelve hundred," etc., must be rendered *millecênto, mílle dugênto*, etc.: as *mílle ottocênto ottantasêtte*, 1887.

(4) "Both," "all three," etc., are *tútti* (fem. *tútte*) *e dúe, tútti* (fem. *tútte*) *e tre*, etc.

a. If the noun modified by *ventúno, trentúno*, etc., *follows* this numeral, it should be in the singular; if it *precedes*, in the plural.

Ex.: *Sessantúna lira* or *lire sessantúna*, 61 francs.

b. In dates the definite article is prefixed to the number representing the year, if that number follows a preposition, or does not follow the name of a month.

Ex.: *Nel mille ottocênto ottantasêtte*, in 1887.

c. "What time is it?" is *che óra è?* "It is six," etc., is *sóno le sêi*, etc., *óre* being understood. "One o'clock" is *il tócco.*

Ex.: *Sóno le dúe e mêzzo*, it's half-past two.
Sóno le tre e diêci, it's ten minutes past three.
Ci máncano vênti minúti dlle quáttro, it's twenty minutes to four.
Sóno le cinque mêno un quárto, it's a quarter to five.

39. The ordinal numerals are:—

1st, *primo.*
2d, *secóndo.*
3d, *têrzo.*
4th, *quárto.*
5th, *quinto.*
6th, *sêsto.*
7th, *sêttimo.*
8th, *ottâvo.*
9th, *nôno.*
10th, *dêcimo.*
11th, *undêcimo* or *dêcimo primo.*
12th, *duodêcimo* or *dêcimo secóndo.*
13th, *tredicêsimo* or *dêcimo têrzo.*
14th, *quattordicêsimo* or *dêcimo quárto.*
15th, *quindicêsimo* or *dêcimo quinto.*
16th, *dêcimo sêsto.*
17th, *dêcimo sêttimo.*
18th, *dêcimo ottâvo.*
19th, *dêcimo nôno.*
20th, *ventêsimo.*
21st, *ventêsimo primo* or *ventunêsimo.*
22d, *ventêsimo secóndo* or *ventiduêsimo.*
30th, *trentêsimo.*
100th, *centêsimo.*
101st, *centêsimo primo.*
115th, *centoquindicêsimo.*
200th, *dugentêsimo.*
1000th, *millêsimo.*
2000th, *duemilêsimo.*

All of them form their feminines and plurals like other adjectives in *o.*

Ex.: *Le settantêsime quinte cóse*, the 75th things.

a. Ordinal numerals are used after the words "book," "chapter," and the names of rulers; but no article intervenes.

Ex.: *Cárlo secóndo*, Charles the Second; *Pío nôno*, Pius IX.
Líbro têrzo, Book the Third; *capítolo quárto*, chapter four.

b. For the day of the month, except the first, a cardinal number is used.

Ex.: *Il dì cinque d' aprile* or *il cinque aprile*, the fifth of April.
Il primo di mággio, the first of May.

c. "A third," "a fourth," "a fifth," etc., are *un têrzo, un quárto, un quinto*, etc. "Half" is *la metà;* the adjective "half" is *mêzzo.*

40. "A couple" or "a pair" is *un páio.* "A dozen" is *úna dozzína.* The expressions *úna decína, úna ventína, úna trentína*, etc., *un centinário, un migliário*, mean "about ten," "about twenty," etc. (see **23**, *d*). "Once," "twice," etc., are *úna vôlta, dúe vôlte*, etc.

Ex.: *Ún páio di scárpe*, a pair of shoes.
Úna cinquantína di persóne, some fifty persons.
L' ho visto parécchie vôlte, I've seen it several times.

EXERCISE 7.

Con l' orolôgio si véde[1] che óre sóno.[2] Un giórno è[3] ventiquáttr' óre. Cêrte óre del giórno è[2] lúme, cêrte óre è[2] búio. Un giórno è[3] ventiquáttr' óre, ma súlla móstra dell' orolôgio, délle óre ce n' è[4] segnáte dódici, perchè le óre del giórno si cóntano[5] dall' úna álle dódici, così: tócco, dúe, tre, quáttro, cínque, sêi, sêtte, ôtto, nôve, diêci, úndici e dódici. Arriváti a dódici non si séguita[6] a díre trédici, quattórdici, e vía fino a ventiquáttro; ma si ricomíncia[7] da cápo dal tócco e si arríva[8] fino a dódici. Il cónto tórna[9] lo stésso: infátti le óre del giórno son[11] ventiquáttro; e dódici e dódici, sommáti insiême, fórmano[10] ventiquáttro. Dódici óre sóno[11] la metà del giórno. L' orolôgio ha[12] dódici óre; e le ha[13] segnáte gíro gíro álla móstra. L' óra è[3] sessánta minúti; e l' orolôgio ségna[14] ánche i minúti. Quélle righettíne tórno tórno álla móstra, fra un' óra e un' áltra, sóno[11] i sessánta minúti che fórmano[10] l' óra. La lancétta gránde ségna[14] i minúti. La lancétta piccína ségna[14] le óre. La lancétta gránde ógni óra fa[15] il gíro di túttì e sessánta i minúti; gíra[16] túttа la móstra. La lancétta píccola ógni óra ségna[14] un número, e a girár túttа la móstra ci métte[17] dódici óre, perchè dódici son[11] le óre segnáte súlla mó-

stra. Óra sóno[2] le dódici; túttе e dúe le lancétte sóno[11] súlle dódici. Fra un' óra la lancétta gránde avrà[18] giráta tútta la móstra, e sarà[19] daccápo sul número 12, e la lancétta piccína sarà[19] sull' úno.

[1] *Si véde* = we see. [2] It is. [3] Is. [4] *Ce n'è* = there are. [5] *Si céntano* = are counted. [6] *Non si séguita* = we don't go on. [7] *Si ricomíncia* = we begin over again. [8] *Si arriva* = we go. [9] Amounts to. [10] Make. [11] Are. [12] Has. [13] *Le ha* = it has them. [14] Marks. [15] Makes. [16] It goes around. [17] *Ci mètte* = it takes. [18] Will have. [19] Will be.

EXERCISE 8.

A year is[1] 365 days. Every seven days is[1] a week. The days of the week are-called[2]: Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, Saturday. Sunday[3] is[1] a[4] holiday; the other days we-work,[5] and therefore they-are-called[2] working-days. The year is-divided[6] into twelve months. The months are-called[2]: January, February, March, April, May, June, July, August, September, October, November, December.[17] The month is[1] thirty or thirty-one days.[18] When the month begins,[7] it-is-called[8] the first of the month; the second day is-called[8] the second of the month, the third, the third, and so-on[9] until the thirtieth or thirty-first. January, March, May, July, August, October, and[4] December have[10] thirty-one days. April, June, September, and[4] November have[10] thirty days. February is[1] the shortest month, because it-has[11] twenty-eight days only.[12] But every four years February has[11] twenty-nine days; and that[16] year is-called[13] leap-year. The year begins[7] from January; January is,[1] then,[14] the first month of the year. The year ends[15] with December; so[14] December is[1] the last month of the year.

[1] *È.* [2] *Si chiámano.* [3] Use def. article. [4] Omit. [5] *Si lavóra.* [6] *Si divíde.* [7] *Comíncia.* [8] *Si dice.* [9] *Così.* [10] *Hánno.* [11] *Ha.* [12] *Sóli.* [13] *Si chiáma.* [14] *Dúnque.* [15] *Finísce.* [16] *Quell'.* [17] Use no article with the names of months. [18] See **38**, *Úno*, and **38**, *a*.

DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

41. For the indefinite pronouns, see **86–91.**

42. (1) The demonstrative pronouns used adjectively are *quésto*, "this," and *quéllo* or *cotésto*, "that." *Cotésto* (spelled also *codésto*) is used of objects near the person addressed. *Quésto* and *cotésto* are inflected like other adjectives; but they generally drop *o* before a vowel. *Quéllo* is inflected like *bèllo* (see **29**, *c*).

Ex.: *Quest' uòmo*, this man; *quèste ragàzze*, these girls.
Quel bambìno, that infant; *quéi fanciúlli*, those children.
Quell' amìco, that friend; *quégli spòsi*, that couple.
Quéllo zìo, that uncle; *quélle signóre*, those ladies.

Quésto and *quéllo* are also used substantively for "this," "that," "this one," "that one": as *fáte quésto, non fáte quéllo*, "do this, don't do that."

(2) "This man" is translated by *quésti*, "that man" by *quégli*, *quéi*, or *cotésti* (rare); these words are invariable, refer only to persons, and are used only in the nominative singular. *Costúi* and *colúi* mean respectively the same as *quésti* and *quégli*, but are not defective, having a feminine singular *costêi*, *colêi*, and a plural (both genders alike) *costóro*, *colóro*. *Costúi* is often used in a depreciative sense.

Ex.: *Quésti è francèse e quégli è tedèsco*, this man is French and that one is German.
Chi è costúi, who is this fellow?
Pàrlo di colúi, I speak of that man.

(3) *Ciò*, "this," "that," is invariable, and represents a whole idea, not a single word: as *ciò è véro*, "that's so."

a. *Quéllo* and *quésto*, *quégli* and *quésti* mean also "the former," "the latter."

b. "He who" is *colúi che*, or simply *chi*. "The one who, whom, which," "that which," "what" is *quéllo che* or *quel che*.

Ex.: *Chi lavóra* or *colúi che lavóra*, he who works.
Quel che dico io, the one I mean.
A quel che sènto, from what I hear.

43. The interrogative "who," "whom," is *chi*. "What?" used substantively is *che*, *che côsa*, or *côsa*.* "What?" used adjectively is *che* or *quále*. "Which?" is *quále*. *Quále* has a plural *quáli*; *chi* and *che* are invariable. "How much?" is *quánto* (*-a*), "how many?" is *quánti* (*-e*).

Ex.: *Chi védo*, whom do I see?
Di chi parláte, of whom do you speak?
Che côsa dice, what does he say?
Che or *quali libri avéte comprâto*, what books did you buy?
Quále di quésti volúmi è il primo, which of these volumes is the first?

a. The interrogative "whose" is *di chi*.

Ex.: *Di chi è quésto bigliétto*, whose card is this?

b. In exclamations "what a," "what," are rendered by *che* or *quále* without any article.

Ex.: *Che bel paése*, what a beautiful country!

44. The principal relative pronouns are *che*, *cúi*, *il quále*: they are all applied to both persons and things, and mean "who, "whom," "which," or "that." *Il quále* is inflected

* *Côsa* (as *côsa dice?*) is generally avoided in written Italian. Note that *chi* is used in *indirect*, as well as in direct questions.

(*la quále, i quáli, le quáli*). *Che* and *cúi* are invariable. in general *che* is used only as subject and direct object. *cúi* only after prepositions or as indirect object. In poetry *ónde* is often used to signify *of which* or *from which.*

Ex.: *La língua che si párla*, the language which we speak.
L' uômo del quále si tratta, the man of whom we are speaking.
Le persóne a cúi or *álle quáli párlo*, the persons to whom I speak.
Lo scritto di cúi párlo, the work I am speaking of.

(1) As subject or direct object *che* is preferred to *il quále*, unless clearness requires the latter.

(2) The relative "whose" is *il cúi* or *del quále.*

Ex.: *Una signóra, il cúi nóme è Lucia*, a lady whose name is Lucy.
Un uômo, le cúi figlie conósco, a man whose daughters I know.
L' autóre, del cúi líbro si párla, the author whose book we are speaking of.
Le chièse dèlle quáli si védono le cúpole, the churches whose domes we see.

(3) The relative cannot be omitted in Italian.

Ex.: *Le cáse che ho compráte*, the houses I have bought.

a. "Such . . . as" is *tále . . . quále;* in poetry *tále, quále* have a plural *tái, quái* instead of *táli, quáli.* "As much as" is *tánto quánto;* "as many as" is *tánti quánti.*

Ex.: *Quále è il pádre tále è il fíglio*, as is the father, so is the son

b. "He who" is *chi* or *colúi che* (see **42**, *b*).

Ex.: *Chi ha la sanità è ricco*, he who has health is rich.

c. "Whoever" is *chiúnque;* "whatever" as a substantive is *túttо quel che* or *checchè*, as an adjective *quále che, qualúnque che, qualúnque, per quánto.* These words, excepting *túttо quel che*, all take the subjunctive. *Checchè* is now but little used.

Ex.: *Chiúnque sídte*, whoever you may be.
Checchè faccídte, fátelo bène, whatever you do, do it **well.**
Tútto quel che volète, whatever you wish.
Qudli che siano i vôstri motivi, whatever your motives may be.
Qualúnque siano i suôi talênti, whatever his talents may be.
In qualúnque státo che io mi trôvi, in whatever condition I may find myself.
Per quánte ricchézze égli ábbia, whatever riches he may have.

45. The possessive pronouns are:—

My:	m., *il mío*,	f., *la mía*,	m. pl., *i miêi*,	f. pl., *le mie.*
Thy:	*il túo*,	*la túa*,	*i tuôi*,	*le túe.*
His, her, its:	*il súo*,	*la súa*,	*i suôi*,	*le súe.*
Our:	*il nôstro*,	*la nôstra*,	*i nôstri*,	*le nôstre.*
Your:	*il vôstro*,	*la vôstra*,	*i vôstri*,	*le vôstre.*
Their:	*il lóro*,	*la lóro*,	*i lóro*,	*le lóro.*

Lóro is invariable; the others agree with the object possessed: as *il mío náso*, "my nose"; *la súa bócca*, "his, her mouth"; *i vôstri ôcchi*, "your eyes"; *le lóro lábbra*, "their lips."

When the possessive stands alone in the predicate, the article is omitted if the possessive is used adjectively.

Ex.: *Quésto cappêllo è mío*, this hat is *mine.*
Quésto cappêllo è il mío, *this* hat is mine (*i.e.*, the one that belongs to me).

a. The article (unless it might be used in English) is omitted before the possessive: (1) When a numeral, an adjective of quantity, or a demonstrative or interrogative adjective precedes it: as *dúe cáni suôi*, "two dogs of his" (but *i dúe cáni suôi*, "the two dogs of his" or "his two dogs"); *mólti miêi amíci*, "many friends of mine" (but *i mólti miêi amíci*, "the many friends of mine" or "my many friends"); *quésto túo difêtto*, "this fault of thine." (2) When the possessive forms part of a title: as *Vôstra Maestà*,

"Your Majesty"; *Sùa Altézza*, "His Highness." (3) When the possessive modifies a noun used in the vocative (in this case the possessive generally follows its noun): as *amico mio*, "my friend!" (4) The article is generally omitted also when the possessive precedes a noun in the singular expressing relationship: as *nôstra mádre*, "our mother." But if the noun has a diminutive ending, or an adjective precedes the noun, the article is not omitted: as *il tùo fratellìno*, "thy little brother"; *la vôstra gentilissima sorélla*, "your kind sister." (5) The article is omitted also in certain phrases, such as: *da pàrte mia*, "for me"; *per amôr mio*, "for my sake"; *in cása nôstra*, "in our house"; *a mòdo sùo*, "in his own way"; *è cólpa vôstra*, "it's your fault."

b. The possessive, when not necessary for clearness, is usually replaced by a definite article.

Ex.: *Cóme sta la mámma*, how is your mother?
Ha perdúto il giudìzio, he has lost his senses.
Bàttono i piédi, they stamp their feet.

c. When the name of the thing possessed is direct object of a verb, the Italians often use instead of the possessive a conjunctive personal pronoun (see **47**) and a definite article. If the thing possessed be a part of the body or clothing, this construction is frequent, even when the name of the thing is not object of a verb.

Ex.: *Si strappa i capélli*, he tears his hair (lit., he tears to himself the hairs).
Mi ìaglio il dìto, I cut my finger (I cut to myself the finger).
Il cáne gli agguantò la gámba, the dog seized his leg (seized to him the leg).
Mi duòle il cápo, my head aches (to me aches the head).

d. When the possessor is not the subject of the sentence, "his," "her" are, for the sake of clearness, often rendered *di lúi*, *di lèi*: as *égli non conósce il di lèi cuòre*, "he does not know her heart."

e. "A . . . of mine, of thine," etc., is *un mio*, *un tùo*, etc.: as *ùna nôstra cugìna*, "a cousin of ours."

EXERCISE 9.

Quándo cádde[1] l' impêro, Siêna soffrì[2] méno délle áltre città toscáne dálle invasióni déi bárbari; ma vénne[3] sótto la signoría déi Longobárdi, e pôi fu[4] úna délle città líbere di Carlomágno, néi cónti e baróni del quále, arricchíti dálle têrre e dái castêlli che diêde[5] lóro[6] l' imperatóre, i nôbili senési crédono[7] trováre l' orígine délla lóro nobiltà. Quésti ládri forestiêri, i cúi nídi néi dintórni di Firênze i cittadíni di quésto comúne cercávano[8] di distrúggere, abbandonárono[9] volontariaménte i lóro castêlli nel territôrio senése, ed entrárono[10] nélla città, che da éssi e dái véscovi veníva[4] abbellíta di grándi palázzi e governáta con úna máno di fêrro, finchè[11] i comúni non[11] si levárono[12] e non[11] fécero[13] prevalére il lóro dirítto a participáre nélla côsa púbblica.

[1] Fell. [2] Suffered. [3] It came. [4] Was. [5] Gave. [6] To them. [7] Think, believe. [8] Were trying. [9] Abandoned. [10] Entered. [11] *Finchè non* = until. [12] *Si levárono* = arose. [13] Made.

EXERCISE 10.

Charles V made[1] of Siena a fief for his son Philip II, who ceded-it[2] to Cosimo I, and the latter built-there[3] the fort which the Spaniards had-tried-to[4] construct. The city remained[5] under the rule of the good dukes of Lorraine, until Napoleon made-it[6] capital of the department of the Ombrone. After the fall of the emperor, it-returned[7] under the dominion of the dukes. In[8] 1860 it-was[9] the first Tuscan city that voted[10] the union of Italy under Victor Emmanuel II, the only honest king of whom history speaks.[11]

[1] *Fèce.* [2] *La cedètte.* [3] *Vi fabbricò.* [4] *Avèvano volúto.* [5] *Restò.* [6] *La fèce.* [7] *Ritornò.* [8] See **38**, *b.* [9] *Fu.* [10] *Votásse.* [11] *Párli*, which should precede its subject.

pages 36, 37.
Review Article
Exercise 3 ... XII

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

46. Personal pronouns are divided into two classes, conjunctive and disjunctive: the conjunctive forms are those used as direct object of a verb, and as indirect object without a preposition; the disjunctive forms are those used as subject of a verb, and as object of a preposition.

Ex.: ÉGLI ve lo *dà per* ME.
He to you it gives for me.

CONJUNCTIVE FORMS.

47. Conjunctive pronouns are always unaccented, and cannot be separated from the verb, which they sometimes follow but oftener precede, as will be explained in **48**.

They are used only as direct object of a verb or as indirect object without a preposition. The forms are:—

Mi, me, to me.	*Ti*, thee, to thee.
Ci, us, to us.*	*Vi*, you, to you.
Si (reflexive), himself, to himself; herself, to herself; itself, to itself.	
Si (reflexive), themselves, to themselves.	
Lo, him;* *gli*, to him.†	*La*, her; *le*, to her.
Li, them (masc.); *lóro*, to them.†	*Le*, them (fem.); *lóro*, to them.

"It" must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. "It" representing not a word, but a whole clause, is *lo*.‡

Ex.: *Mi conósce*, he knows me; *ti do i líbri*, I give thee the books.
Ci vedète, you see us; *vi dico tútto*, I tell you everything.
Si vèste, he dresses himself; *si divèrtono*, they amuse themselves.

---

* In old Italian and in poetry *ne* is often used for *ci*, and *il* for *lo*.

† In conversation *li* is often used for *gli*, and *gli* or *li* for *lóro*.

‡ In certain idiomatic phrases *la* represents an indefinite object: as *pagárla cára*, "to pay dearly for it."

Êcco l' ôro: ve lo do, here's the gold: I give it to you.
Êcco la pálla: la védo, here's the ball: I see it.
Cóme potéva sapére se io veníva o no? — Lo ha indovinâto. — "How could he tell whether I was coming or not?" "He guessed it."

(1) It will be seen that the third person (not reflexive) has different forms for the direct and the indirect object.

Ex.: *Lo trovâi*, I found him; *gli féci un regâlo*, I made him a present; *la lâscia*, he leaves her; *le scrîve*, he writes to her.
Li cercâte, you seek them (masc.); *le salutâte*, you greet them (fem.); *mandiâmo lôro mille salúti*, we send them (masc. or fem.) a thousand greetings.

(2) The reflexive pronouns of the first and second persons are *mi, ci; ti, vi.* All plural reflexive pronouns are used also as reciprocal pronouns. A verb is called *reflexive* when it has as *direct* or *indirect* object a *conjunctive* pronoun representing the same person as its subject.

Ex.: *Mi defêndo*, I defend myself; *vi lavâte*, you wash yourselves.
Si fa onôre, she does herself credit; *si ôdiano*, they hate each other; *ci amiâmo*, we love one another.

(3) Another conjunctive pronoun is *ne*,* "of it," "of them"; it corresponds also to "any," "some" when these words mean "any, some of it," "any, some of them." It is often used pleonastically in Italian.

Ex.: *Ne pârla*, he speaks of it; *ne ho*, I have some.
Non ne abbiâmo, we haven't any; *ne volête*, do you want any?
Tu ne approfîtti di quésta libertà, you make good use of this liberty.

a. Vi, "you," and *ci* and *ne*, "us," are not distinguished by form nor position from the adverbs *vi, ci*, meaning "there," "here," "to it," "to them,"† and the adverb *ne*, "thence" (see **84**):* as *ci vâdo*, "I go there"; *vi è stâto*, "he has been there."

* Cf. French *en*.

† Cf. French *y*.

48. The conjunctive pronouns, except *lóro*, immediately precede the verb: as *mi vedéte*, "you see me"; *non lo capísco*, "I don't understand him."

But when the verb is an infinitive,* a positive imperative,† a present participle, or a past participle used without an auxiliary, the pronoun follows the verb, and is written as one word with it: as *per vedérlo*, "to see him"; *di avérlo vedúto*, "to have seen him"; *vedételi*, "see them"; *vedêndoci*, "seeing us"; *avêndoci vedúto*, "having seen us"; *vedútoti*, "having seen thee." The addition of the pronoun does not change the place of the accent.

Lóro always follows the verb, but is never united to it: as *égli dà lóro del víno*, "he gives them some wine"; *parláte lóro*, "speak to them." ‡

a. When an infinitive depends immediately (without an intervening preposition) on another verb, a conjunctive pronoun belonging to the infinitive may go with either verb: as *pôsso vedérti* or *ti pôsso vedére*, "I can see thee." If both verbs have objects, the main verb regularly takes all conjunctive pronouns: as *ve lo sênto dire*, "I hear you say it." See **55**, first paragraph, end.

If, however, the main verb is impersonal, it cannot take the object of the infinitive: as *bisógna fárlo*, "it is necessary to do it." If the main verb is *fáre*, *lasciáre*, *sentíre*, *udíre*, or *vedére*, it must take the pronoun: as *lo fa chiamáre*, "he has him called." A reflexive pronoun oftenest goes with the main verb.

If the main verb is *fáre*, and the dependent infinitive has a direct object, the object of *fáre*, if it has one, must be indirect:

* Not the infinitive used — with a negative — as imperative (see **72**): as *non lo fáre*, "do not do it" (second pers. sing.).

† Not the negative imperative, nor the subjunctive used imperatively (see **77**, *a*): as *non li guardáte*, "do not look at them"; *si règoli*, "let him moderate himself" (third pers. sing. pres. subj.).

‡ Students should follow strictly all of these rules; but they will find that the first is, in certain cases, not always observed by good Italian writers. In literature a pronoun often follows a verb that begins a sentence.

as *le fa avére la lèttera*, "he lets her have the letter"; *fàteli vedére a quel signóre*, "let that gentleman see them"; *dovrèi fárglielo accettáre*, "I ought to make him accept it." This construction is generally used also with *lasciáre*, "to let," and often with *sentíre* and *udíre*, "to hear," and *vedére*, "to see." Note that the main verb takes all conjunctive pronouns.

b. When a conjunctive pronoun is joined to an infinitive, that infinitive drops its final *e*; if it ends in *-rre*, it drops *-re*: as *fárlo* (*fáre*), "to do it"; *condúrvi* (*condúrre*), "to conduct you."

c. The final vowel of *mi, ti, si* is often, and that of *lo, la* is nearly always elided before a verb beginning with a vowel: as *t' ámo*, "I love thee"; *l' ho vísto*, "I've seen him."

d. All conjunctive pronouns except *gli* and *glie* (see **50**) double their initial consonant when added to any form of a verb that ends in an accented vowel: as *dámmi* (imper. *da'* from *dáre*), "give me"; *dillo* (imper. *di'* from *díre*), "say it"; *parlerólle* (antique, for *le parlerò*), "I shall speak to her."

e. Pronouns are joined to the interjection *ècco*, "see here," just as they are joined to the imperative of a verb: as *èccomi*, "here I am"; *èccotelo prónto*, "here it is ready for thee."

49. When two conjunctive pronouns come together, the indirect object precedes the direct: as *mi vi presènta*, "he introduces you to me"; *non vuol presentárvimi*, "he will not introduce me to you"; *gli si presentò un uómo*, "a man presented himself to him." See, however, **55**, end.

Lóro, however, always comes last: as *presentátela lóro*, "introduce her to them."

Ne follows all forms except *lóro*: as *me ne dà*, "he gives me some"; *dátene lóro*, "give them some."

50. *Mi, ti, ci, vi, si* change their *i* to *e* before *lo, la, li, le, ne* (pronoun or adverb); and if the two words follow the verb, they are joined together: as *me lo díce*, "he tells me

it"; *ve ne domándo*, "I ask you for some"; *mandátecelo*, "send it to us."* *Gli* and *le* ("to her") become *glie* before *lo, la, li, le, ne*, and unite with them: as *gliéli mándo*, "I send them to him, to her"; *vôglio dárglielo*, "I wish to give it to him, to her."

DISJUNCTIVE FORMS.

51. These forms are so called because they do not necessarily stand next to the verb.

Disjunctive pronouns have two cases, nominative and objective. The objective case is used only after prepositions (for exceptions, see **51**, *a*, *b*).

The disjunctive forms are these:—

Io, I; *me*, me.	*Tu*, thou; *te*, thee.
Nói, we; *nói*, us.	*Vói*, you; *vói*, you.
Égli, lúi, ésso, he; *lúi, ésso*, him.	
Élla, lêi, éssa, she; *lêi, éssa*, her.	
Éssi, lóro (églino), they (masc.);	*lóro, éssi*, them (masc.).
Ésse, lóro (élleno), they (fem.);	*lóro, ésse*, them (fem.).

"It" must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. "It" as subject of an impersonal verb is regularly not expressed (see, however, **51**, *h*).

Ex.: *La cása è grandíssima, e intórno ad éssa c' è un giardíno*, the house is very large, and around it there is a garden.
Non è véro, it isn't true; *piôve*, it rains.

(1) The various pronouns of the third person are used as follows. In speaking of things the different forms of *ésso* are generally employed. In speaking of persons *égli*

* In poetry *me lo, me ne*, etc., often become *mel, men*, etc.: as *tel dico*, "I tell thee so"; *sen tórna*, "he returns thence." *Non lo* often = *nol*.

(or *ésso*), *élla* (or *éssa*), pl. *éssi, ésse* are used for the nominative in written Italian, but in the spoken language they are replaced by *lúi, lêi, lóro;* for the objective *lúi, lêi, lóro* are used both in conversation and in writing. *Égli*no and *élleno* are antique forms. For "he who," etc., see **42**, *b*.

Ex.: *Quéste cóse sóno vére anch' ésse*, these things are true, too.
Élla párla con lóro, she speaks with them.
Lêi è gióvane ma lúi è vécchio, she is young, but he is old.
Vénnero da nói anch' éssi, they came to us, too.

(2) As the Italian verb denotes by its endings the person and number of its subject, the personal pronouns of the nominative case are generally omitted. When expressed (for clearness, emphasis, or euphony), they may precede or follow the verb; in dependent clauses they nearly always follow. The subject of an interrogative verb usually comes after it, as in English.

Ex.: *Parliámo di lúi*, we speak of him; *non vádo*, I don't go.
S' io fóssi ricco cóme è égli, if I were rich as he is.

(3) The disjunctive reflexive pronoun is *sè*, which is masculine and feminine, singular and plural.

Ex.: *Lo fécero da sè*, they did it by themselves.

a. Use the objective case: (1) When a pronoun of the third person is not subject of an expressed verb: as *beáto lúi*, "happy he!" *tánto i genitóri che lúi sóno ricchi*, "his parents as well as he are rich." (2) When the pronoun stands in the predicate after the verb *éssere:* as *credêndo ch' io fóssi te*, "thinking I was you." But "it is I," etc., are *sóno io, sêi tu, è lúi, è lêi, siámo nói, siête vói, sóno lóro*. (3) In the cases mentioned in **51**, *b*.

b. (1) Clearness or emphasis occasionally requires the disjunctive pronoun instead of the conjunctive; in this case the conjunctive form is often inserted also.

Ex.: *Párlo a vói signóre*, I speak to *you*, sir.
Mi pídce ánche a me, it pleases me too.

(2) The disjunctive form must *always* be used when the verb has two direct or two indirect objects.

Ex.: *Védo lúi e lèi*, I see him and her.
Lo do a mío pádre e a te, I give it to my father and to thee.

c. In speaking of a company, a class, or a people *nói áltri*, *vói áltri* (which are also written as one word) are used for *nói*, *vói*.

Ex.: *Nói áltri italiáni*, we Italians.
Vói áltri pittóri, you painters.

d. "With me," "with thee," "with himself, herself, themselves" are either *con me*, etc., or *méco*, *téco*, *séco*.

e. "Myself," "thyself," etc., used for emphasis with a pronoun or noun, are rendered by the adjective *stésso*.

Ex.: *Nói stéssi la vedémmo*, we saw her ourselves.

f. "One another," "each other" is *l' un l' áltro*.

Ex.: *Ci amiámo l' un l'áltro*, we love one another.

g. In Florence *élla* is often shortened into *la* (plural *le*), which is used of both persons and things. In poetry *égli* becomes *éi*.

Ex.: *La non viène*, she doesn't come.
Páre che la si pôssa tenér in máno, it looks as if it might be held in the hand.

h. In impersonal phrases like "it is" the subject, "it," is occasionally expressed in Italian; it is then translated *égli*, which in the spoken language is shortened into *gli*.

Ex.: *Gli è che*, it is because.

52. (1) The usual form of address in Italy is *Élla* * (or *élla*), objective *Lêi* (or *lêi*); in conversation *Élla* is replaced by *Lêi* (or *lêi*). This word really means "it," and takes the verb in the third person; but an adjective or past participle modifying it agrees in gender with the person it represents. The plural of *Élla* is *Lóro* (or *lóro*), which takes the verb in the third person plural.

Ex.: *Lêi* or *Élla è tedêsco, signóre*, you are German, sir.
Signorina Nêri, Lêi (or *Élla*) *fu lascidta sóla*, Miss Neri, you were left alone.
Sóno liêto che La stia bêne (see **51**, *g*), I'm glad you are well.
E Lóro, dóve vánno, and you, where are you going?
Lóro êrano già partîti, you were already gone.
Signorîne, lóro sóno mólto studiôse, young ladies, you are very studious.

Like other personal pronouns, *Élla* and *Lóro* are very often omitted in the nominative.

Lêi è trôppo gentile or *è trôppo gentile*, you are too kind.
Cóme stánno, how do you (pl.) do?

The conjunctive forms of *Élla* are *La, Le* (or *la, le*), those of *Lóro* are *Li, Le, Lóro* (or *li, le, lóro*); they occupy the same positions and undergo the same modifications as the corresponding pronouns of the third person (see **48**, **49**, **50**). The reflexive pronoun of *Élla* and *Lóro* is *si*.

Ex.: *Le promêtto di visitárla*, I promise (you) to visit you.
Glielo do, I give it to you.
La prêgo d' accomodársi, I beg you to seat yourself.
Vidi Lêi e il bábbo, I saw you and your father (see **51**, *b*, 2).
Dico lóro, I tell you (pl.).

---

* Standing for *Vôstra Signoria*, "your lordship" or "ladyship," or some other title of the feminine gender.

Le cercàva, I was looking for you (fem. pl.).
Si divèrtono, signorìni, are you enjoying yourselves, young gentlemen?

The possessive of *Élla* is *Súo* (or *súo*). See **45**.

Ex.: *La Súa gradìta lèttera*, your welcome letter.

(2) *Vói* is the form of address oftenest found in books; it is used sometimes in conversation also, but only toward inferiors or toward equals with whom one is on familiar terms.* It is employed for both plural and singular (like English "you"), although its verb is always plural; an adjective or participle modifying it agrees in gender and number with the person or persons it represents.

Ex.: *Vói qui, Piètro*, You here, Peter?
Vói siète dìti tùtti e dúe, you are tall, both of you.

(3) In speaking to an intimate friend, a near relative, a child, or an animal the only form of address is *tu*. *Tu* is used also, like English "thou," in poetry and poetic prose. The plural of *tu* is *vói*.

Ex.: *Ti chiàmo Enrìco*, I call you Henry.
Dòve sèi tu, where art thou?
Vòglio vedèrvi, figliuòli mièi, my children, I wish to see you.

EXERCISE II.

Tant' è[1]! dicéva[2] tra sè un giórno Niccolíno; vôglio[3] vedére se quégli uccellíni son[4] náti. Li guárdo[5] solaménte e riscéndo[6] súbito. — E Niccolíno s' arrámpica[7] su per quell' álbero, tentándo[8] d' arriváre al nído per levársi quélla curiosità. Ma sul più bêllo,[9] sênte[10] la vóce del bábbo il quále êra[11] lì prêsso nélla viôttola;

* Though advocated by some of the best writers and speakers of Italian, the use of *vói* instead of *Lêi* and *Lóro* has not become general. In Southern Italy, however, *vói* is the form popularly used.

vuôle[12] scénder lêsto per non fársi côgliere in fállo, ma nélla fúria si smarrísce,[13] gli mánca[14] il sostégno, precípita[15] a têrra, e cadêndo[16] si fa mále a[17] un piêde. Il dolóre lo fa[18] strilláre; álle grída córrono[19] il bábbo e la mámma che lo raccôlgono[20] esclamándo[21]: — Te l' abbiámo[22] détto le cênto vôlte che a' nídi non ti dovévi[23] voltár nemméno: êcco quel che succêde[24] ai curiósi e a' disubbidiênti. — E sôrte per lúi che lo sentírono,[25] perchè così potérono[26] prónti bagnárgli il piêde coll' ácqua frédda, e dópo avérglielo tenúto in quell' ácqua parécchio têmpo, potéron[26] fasciárglielo strétto; in quésto môdo e dópo quálche giórno di ripôso assolúto, Niccolíno potè[27] ricominciáre a fáre quálche pásso per cása.

[1] I don't care. [2] Said. [3] I want. [4] Are. [5] I will look at. [6] Will come down again. [7] Climbs. [8] Trying. [9] *Sul più bêllo* = at the critical moment. [10] He hears. [11] Was. [12] He tries. [13] He gets confused. [14] Fails. [15] He tumbles. [16] Falling. [17] *Fa mále a* = he injures. [18] Makes. [19] Run. [20] Pick up. [21] Exclaiming. [22] We have. [23] *Non dovévi* = you mustn't. [24] Happens. [25] They heard. [26] They could. [27] Was able.

EXERCISE 12.

[In this exercise CARLINO and GORO use *vói;* ARMANDO uses *wói* before GORO enters, *Lêi* afterwards.]

Carlíno. Sir, we are[1] alone.

Armándo. So it seems[2] (*looking*[3] *around*).

Carlíno. I repeat[4] to you that we are[1] alone (*louder*).

Armándo. But I tell[5] you that I admit-it.[6]

Carlíno. It is[7] time to-raise[8] the mask —

Armándo. (Oh-my[9]! this-fellow[10] has[11] recognized me.)

Carlíno. And to[15] speak plainly.

Armándo. That is[7] what I wanted[12] to[15] do, but they interrupted[13] me all-the-time.[14]

Carlíno. Do[15] you see[16] that grove over-there?

Armándo. I see[17] it.

Carlíno. There nobody will-interrupt[18] you.

Armándo. Must[19] I go there to speak (*surprised*)?

Carlíno. We shall-go[20] together.

Enter[15] GORO *with two guns.*

Carlino. (*Taking*[21] *one of-them*) Take[22] the other.

Armando. Thanks, I am[23] not[24] a[25] hunter.

Goro. Take[22] it, or-else[26]—(*brandishing*[27] *a thick club*).

Armando. Willingly — to[28] satisfy you — excuse-me,[29] is[f] it loaded?

Carlino. To-be-brief,[30] you hate[31] me; you must[32] hate me. I hate[33] you. So[47] over-there in that grove — at eighty paces from-each-other[34] — bang![35] Either you kill[36] me or I kill[37] you.

Armando. But I have[38] n't[24] these sinister intentions, which-are[15] contrary to my principles.

Carlino. In that[50] case you will-permit[39] this-man-to-amuse-himself-by-shaking[40] the dust from your[41] black coat with that club.

Armando. No, indeed; what-are-you-thinking-of[42]? It would-be[43] too much-trouble[44]! (*Goro brandishes*[45] *the club*) Be-easy[46] with the club.

Carlino. No? Then[47] Carolina must[48] be mine.

Armando. You're-welcome-to-her.[49]

Carlino. In that[50] case we are friends; but be-off[51] from[52] here, do-you-understand[53]?

Armando. (What a[54] nice way they have[55] in this country!)

[1] *Sidmo.* [2] *Pare.* [3] *Guarddndo.* [4] *Ripéto.* [5] *Dico.* [6] *Ne convéngo.* [7] *È.* [8] To (*di*) raise to one's self. . . . [9] *Ahi.* [10] See **42, 2.** [11] *Ha.* [12] *Volévo.* [13] *Hanno interrótto.* [14] Always. [15] Omit. [16] *Vedéte.* [17] *Védo.* [18] *Interromperà.* [19] *Dévo.* [20] *Andrémo.* [21] *Prendéndo.* [22] *Prendéte.* [23] *Sóno.* [24] *Non*, "not," must precede the verb. [25] See **16,** *a.* [26] *Altriménti.* [27] *Agitándo.* [28] *Per.* [29] *Scúsi.* [30] *Alle córte.* [31] *Odiáte.* [32] *Dovéte.* [33] *Ódio.* [34] The one from the other. [35] *Brun.* [36] *Ammazzáte.* [37] *Ammázzo.* [38] *Ho.* [39] *Permetterète.* [40] That this man amuses (*divérta*) himself to shake. [41] See **45,** *c.* [42] Seems-it (*pare*) to you? [43] *Sarébbe.* [44] *Incómodo.* [45] *Agita.* [46] *Stia buóno.* [47] *Dúnque.* [48] *Déve.* [49] Take (*pigli*, subj.) her then (*púre*) for-yourself. [50] *Tal.* [51] *Via.* [52] *Di.* [53] *Intendéste.* [54] **43,** *b.* [55] *Hánno.*

AUXILIARY VERBS.

53. The irregular verbs *éssere*, "to be," and *avére*, "to have," are the ones most used as auxiliaries in Italian. They are conjugated as follows:—

a. **Infinitives**: *éssere*, to be; *éssere státo*, to have been.
Participles: *essêndo*, being; *essêndo státo*, having been; *státo*, been.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
Sóno,	*Êra,*	*Fúi,*	*Sarò,*
sêi,	*êri,*	*fósti,*	*sarái,*
è,	*êra,*	*fu,*	*sarà,*
siámo,	*eravámo.*	*fúmmo.*	*sarémo,*
siête,	*eravâte.*	*fóste,*	*saréte,*
sóno.	*êrano.*	*fúrono.*	*saránno.*

PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PRETERITE PERFECT.	FUTURE PERFECT.
Sóno státo (*státa*), etc.	*Êra státo* (*státa*), etc.	*Fúi státo* (*státa*), etc.	*Sarò státo* (*státa*), etc.
siámo státi (*státe*), etc.	*eravámo státi*(*státe*), etc.	*fúmmo státi*(*státe*), etc.	*sarémo státi*(*státe*), etc.

Imperative.	**Subjunctive.**		**Conditional.**
	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	Sia,	*Fóssi,*	*Sarêi,*
Sii or *sia,*	*sia,*	*fóssi,*	*sarésti,*
	sia,	*fósse,*	*sarêbbe.*
siámo,	*siámo,*	*fóssimo,*	*sarémmo,*
siáte.	*siáte,*	*fóste,*	*sarêste,*
	siano or *sieno.*	*fóssero.*	*sarêbbero.*

	PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PERFECT.
	Sia státo (*státa*), etc.	*Fóssi státo* (*státa*), etc.	*Sarêi státo* (*státa*), etc.

b. **Infinitives**: *avêre*, to have; *avére avúto*, to have had.
Participles: *avêndo*, having; *avêndo avúto*, having had; *avúto*, had

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
Hô,	*Avéva*,	*Êbbi*,	*Avrò*,
hái,	*avévi*,	*avésti*,	*avrái*,
ha,	*avéva*,	*ébbe*,	*avrà*,
abbiámo,	*avevámo*,	*avémmo*.	*avrémo*,
avéte,	*aveváte*,	*avéste*,	*avréte*,
hánno.	*avévano*.	*ébbero*.	*avránno*.

PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PRETERITE PERFECT.	FUTURE PERFECT.
Ho avúto,	*Avéva avúto*,	*Êbbi avúto*,	*Avrò avúto*,
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

Imperative.

Ábbi,	
abbiámo,	
abbiáte.	

Subjunctive.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.
Ábbia,	*Avéssi*,
ábbi or *ábbia*,	*avéssi*,
ábbia,	*avésse*,
abbiámo,	*avéssimo*,
abbiáte.	*avéste*,
ábbiano.	*avéssero*.

Conditional.

Avrêi,
avrésti,
avrébbe,
avrémmo,
avréste,
avrébbero.

PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PERFECT.
Ábbia avúto,	*Avéssi avúto*,	*Avrêi avúto*,
etc.	etc.	etc.

54. (1) The auxiliary of the passive is *êssere*, "to be."

Ex.: *Sóno amáto*, I am loved.

(2) The future ("shall," "will") and the conditional ("should," "would") are formed in Italian without any auxiliary.

Ex.: *Ío andrò ed égli verrà*, I shall go, and he will come.
Vorrêi vedérlo, I should like to see him.

(3) The auxiliary of the perfect, pluperfect, preterite perfect, and future perfect tenses is *avére*, "to have," if the verb be active and transitive. If the verb be passive, reflexive, or reciprocal, the auxiliary is always *êssere*. If the verb be intransitive, the auxiliary is generally *êssere*, but sometimes *avére*.* See **47**, (2), on p. 37.

Ex.: *Ho parlâto*, I have spoken.
Avévano fátto quéste côse, they had done these things.
Mi sóno fátto mále, I have hurt myself.
Le dônne si êrano sbagliâte, the women had made a mistake.
Sarò venúto, I shall have come; *è nevicâto*, it has snowed.

a. A past participle used with the auxiliary *êssere* must agree with its subject in gender and number. But when the verb has a reflexive pronoun as *indirect* object, and some other word as *direct* object, the past participle may agree with the subject, or with the direct object, or remain invariable.

Ex.: *La ragázza è tornâta*, the girl has returned.
Le dônne si sóno disputâte, the women have disputed.
La sorêlla si è fátta mále, our sister has hurt herself.
Ci siámo fátti onóre, we have done ourselves credit.
Ci siámo dâta (or *dâto*) *parôla d' onóre*, we have pledged our word of honor.

b. A past participle used with *avére* may or may not agree with its direct object, according to the choice of the writer. It usually does not agree when the object follows; and it nearly always does agree when the object is a personal pronoun preceding the verb.

Ex.: *La birra che avéva bevúto* (or *bevúta*), the beer he had drunk.
Ho vedúto mólte côse, I have seen many things.
Li ho trovâti, I have found them.

c. "To be," expressing a state or condition, is often rendered by *stâre* (**92**, 4), instead of *êssere*. *Stâre per* or *êssere per* (followed by the infinitive) means "to be on the point of."

* The use of *avére* with intransitive verbs must be learned by practice.

Ex.: *Sto bène*, I'm well; *cóme sta*, how are you?
Stáva per uscíre, I was just going out.

d. English "am" (or "was") + the present participle, when expressing duration, is rendered either by the simple present (or imperfect) or by the same tense of *stáre** + the present participle; when denoting futurity, it is translated by the future (or conditional), sometimes by the present (or imperfect).

Ex.: *Camminávа*, he was walking; *státe lavorándo*, you are working.
Leggévano or *stávano leggéndo*, they were reading.
Médito or *sto meditándo*, I am meditating.
Dice che verrà (or *viène*), he says he is coming.
Dísse che verrébbe, he said he was coming.

e. A verb with the auxiliary "used to" (or "would" = "used to") is translated either by the simple imperfect, or by the infinitive with *solére*, "to be accustomed" (**92**, 14).

Ex.: *Vi andáva* (or *soléva andáre*) *ógni séra*, he used to go there every evening.

f. *Venire*, "to come" (**92**, 166), and *rimanére*, "to remain" (**92**, 16), are sometimes used as auxiliaries in the simple tenses of the passive, instead of *éssere*. *Andáre*, "to go" (**92**, 1), is similarly used, but always implying duty or obligation.

Ex.: *I ládri vénnero arrestáti*, the thieves were arrested.
Rimáse sorprésa, she was surprised.
Il fúcile non va toccáto, the gun mustn't be touched.

g. The English auxiliary "do" is not expressed in Italian.

Ex.: *Non viène*, he does not come.

h. "To have a thing done" is *far fáre úna cósa* (**92**, 2).

Ex.: *Il re lo fèce ammazzáre*, the king had him killed.

---

* *Andáre* (**92**, 1) and *venire* (**92**, 166) are sometimes used instead of *stáre*.

55. The third person of the passive is very often replaced by the reflexive construction with *si:* as *si raccónta*, "it is related"; *quésto líbro si lêgge*, "this book is read"; *la spáda che mi si diède*, "the sword that was given me"; *quélle côse si facévano*, "those things were done." Many writers always make the verb agree with its subject in number; but in popular speech the verb is nearly always in the singular when its subject follows (as if *si* were the subject of the verb, and the original subject were the object): as *si védono* (or *véde*) *moltíssime côse*, "many things are seen"; *non si può* (or *pôssono*) *lêggere quésti líbri*, "these books can't be read." *Si* belonging to a dependent infinitive always goes with the main verb; see **48**, *a*.

The construction with *si* is generally used also to render the English indefinite "they" followed by a verb: as *si díce*, "they say." In this sense it is employed with neuter as well as with transitive verbs: as *si va spésso*, "people often go." See also **63**, *a*. In this construction an object pronoun may precede *si:* as *lo si fa*, "it is done."

56. Following are synopses of the compound tenses of transitive, neuter, reflexive, and passive verbs. In the paradigms given henceforth these forms will be omitted.

a. Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *trovâre*, "to find," and *venire*, "to come": —

Avére trovâto, to have found.	*Êssere venúto*, to have come.
Avêndo trovâto, having found.	*Essêndo venúto*, having come.
Ho trovâto, I have found.	*Sóno venúto*, I have come.
Avéva trovâto, I had found.	*Êra venúto*, I had come.
Êbbi trovâto, I had found.	*Fúi venúto*, I had come.
Avrò trovâto, I shall have found.	*Sarò venúto*, I shall have come.
Avrêi trovâto, I should have found.	*Sarêi venúto*, I should have come.
Âbbia trovâto, I have found.	*Sía venúto*, I have come.
Avéssi trovâto, I had found.	*Fóssi venúto*, I had come.

b. Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *alzársi* ("to raise one's self"), "to get up," and *andársene*,* "to go away."

Infinitive PERFECT:	*Êssersi alzáto,*	*Êssersene andáto,*
Participle PERFECT:	*Essêndosi alzáto,*	*Essêndosene andáto,*
Indicative PERFECT:	*Mi sóno alzáto,*	*Me ne sóno andáto,*
PLUPERFECT:	*Mi êra alzáto,*	*Me ne êra andáto,*
PRETERITE PERFECT:	*Mi fúi alzáto,*	*Me ne fúi andáto,*
FUTURE PERFECT:	*Mi sarò alzáto,*	*Me ne sarò andáto,*
Conditional PERFECT:	*Mi sarêi alzáto,*	*Me ne sarêi andáto,*
Subjunctive PERFECT:	*Mi sía alzáto,*	*Me ne sia andáto,*
PLUPERFECT:	*Mi fóssi alzáto.*	*Me ne fóssi andáto.*

c. Following is a synopsis of the entire passive of *amáre*, "to love": —

Infinitive PRESENT:	*Êssere amáto,* to be loved.
PERFECT:	*Êssere státo amáto,* to have been loved.
Participle PRESENT:	*Essêndo amáto,* being loved.
PERFECT:	*Essêndo státo amáto,* having been loved.
Indicative PRESENT:	*Sóno amáto,* I am loved.
PERFECT:	*Só.to státo amáto,* I have been loved.
IMPERFECT:	*Êra amáto,* I was loved.
PLUPERFECT:	*Êra státo amáto,* I had been loved.
PRETERITE:	*Fúi amáto,* I was loved.
PRETERITE PERFECT:	*Fúi státo amáto,* I had been loved.
FUTURE:	*Sarò amáto,* I shall be loved.
FUTURE PERFECT:	*Sarò státo amáto,* I shall have been loved.
Conditional:	*Sarêi amáto,* I should be loved.
PERFECT:	*Sarêi státo amáto,* I should have been loved.
Imperative:	*Sii amáto,* be loved.
Subjunctive PRESENT:	*Sía amáto,* I am loved.
PERFECT:	*Sía státo amáto,* I have been loved.
IMPERFECT:	*Fóssi amáto,* I were loved.
PLUPERFECT:	*Fóssi státo amáto,* I had been loved.

* *Andársene* is composed of the verb *andáre*, "to go," the reflexive *si*, and the adverb *ne*, "thence" (see **47**, *a*).

57. "May," "might," "can," "could" are generally rendered by the proper tense of *potére;** "must," "ought," "shall" = "must," "should" = "ought," by *dovére;** "will" and "would" expressing volition, by *volére.**

Ex.: *Può èssere véro*, it may be true.
Non potéva parlâre, he couldn't speak.
Dêve pagârlo, he must pay him, he shall pay him.
Dovrêbbe fârlo, he ought to do it, he should do it.
Vôglio sapère, I *will* know.
Non vorrèi andâre, I wouldn't go.

No preposition intervenes between these verbs and the dependent infinitive.

Ex.: *Hânno potúto dormire*, they have been able to sleep.
Potrêmo partîre, we shall be able to start.
Dovêmmo venire, we had to come.
Dovrête trovârla, you will have to find her.
Vorrà tornâre, he will want to return.
Vorrêi sapère, I should like to know.

These verbs are not defective, like the English modal auxiliaries; hence in Italian the tense is expressed by the auxiliary itself, and not by the dependent infinitive. To find the proper form of *potére*, *dovére*, or *volére*, replace "may," etc., by the correct tense of "to be able"; "must," etc., by "to be obliged"; "will," etc., by "to want" or "to like": as "I could have said it" = "I should have (*avrêi*) been able (*potúto*) to say it (*dírlo*)" = *avrêi potúto dírlo.*

Ex.: *Avrêbbe dovúto tacère*, he ought to have kept still.
Avrêmmo volúto restâre, we would have stayed.

---

* See **92**, 21, 8, 19. The auxiliary of these verbs is regularly *avére;* but some writers use with them the auxiliary that belongs to the dependent infinitive: as *hânno potúto venire* or *sóno potúti venire*, "they have been able to come."

a. "Must" is also expressed by the impersonal verb *bisognáre*, "to be necessary," followed by the infinitive or by *che*, "that," with the subjunctive. "To have to" is *avére da.*

Ex.: *Bisógna fárlo*, it must be done.
Bisógna che andiámo, we must go.
Ho da scrivere úna lèttera, I have to write a letter.

b. "To be able" meaning "to know how" is *sapére* (see **92**, 6). "Not to be able to help" doing a thing is *non potér a méno di non* (with infinitive) or *non potér fáre a méno di* (with infinitive).

Ex.: *Non sèppe fárlo*, he couldn't do it.
Sa lèggere e scrivere, he can read and write.
Non potè a méno di non ridere, he couldn't help laughing.

EXERCISE 13.

Giorgétto è un bambíno víspo, víspo. È sollécito; álle sêtte è già leváto, ed è già andáto nel giardíno. È mággio, e il giardíno è túttо fiorito; rôse, gígli, viôle mándano[1] un odóre soáve. Giorgétto si strúgge[2] di côgliere i fióri; ma la mámma non vuôle[3]: la mámma lo ha lasciáto andár nel giardíno, a pátto che non cogliésse[4] i fióri. A un trátto Giorgétto véde[5] úna rôsa più bêlla di túttе le áltre, non resíste[6] più al desidêrio di pigliárla. La mámma non lo saprà,[7] non lo può[8] sapére, — díce[9] fra sè Giorgétto; e stênde[10] la máno al cespúglio, ed è per côglierla. Ma che è státo? Ritíra[11] lêsto la máno, e grída,[12] e piánge.[13] La rôsa ha le spíne: il súo gámbo nascósto tra bellíssime fôglie è túttо piêno di spíne; e le spíne gli hánno bucáto túttа la máno. La máno è sanguinósa; e Giorgétto piánge,[13] e la mámma óra si avvedrà[14] che il súo bambíno è disobbediênte.

[1] Send forth. [2] Is dying. [3] Is willing. [4] He should pick. [5] Sees. [6] Resists. [7] Will know. [8] Can. [9] Says. [10] Stretches out. [11] He draws back. [12] Screams. [13] Cries. [14] Will see.

EXERCISE 14.

Silvio Pellico was[1] confined in prison; and there, in the silence of his[2] dungeon, he found[3] a friend, a companion—a spider. Yes, a spider made[4] his web in a corner of the prison, and Silvio did[5] not-destroy-it[6]; on-the-contrary,[7] he used-to-throw[8] him crumbs[9] of bread, and little by little he became-so-attached[10] to that spider, and the spider to him, that the creature used-to-come-down[11] from his web and go[12] to find Pellico,[13] and would-go[12] on his[14] hand and take[15] food[9] from his[14] fingers. One day the jailer removed[16] the unhappy Pellico. The prisoner thought-of[17] his spider, and said[18]: "Now that I am-going-away,[19] he will-come-back[20] perhaps, and will-find[21] the prison empty; or if there-is[22] somebody else here,[23] he may[24] be an enemy of spiders,[9] and tear down that beautiful web and crush the poor beast."

[1] Preterite. [2] See **45**, *b*. [3] *Trovò*. [4] *Fèce*. [5] See **54**, *g*. [6] Not to-him it destroyed (*disfèce*). [7] *Ánzi*. [8] *Buttáva*: see **54**, *e*. [9] Def. art. [10] *Tánto si affezionò*. [11] *Si movéva*: see **54**, *e*. [12] *Andáva*. [13] See **13**, *e*. [14] See **45**, *c*. [15] *Prendéva*. [16] *Mutò di stánza*. [17] *Pensò a*. [18] *Disse*. [19] See **54**, *d*: *me ne vádo*. [20] *Ritornerà*. [21] *Troverà*. [22] *Vi sarà*. [23] Omit. [24] *Potrèbbe*: see **57**.

REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS.

58. Italian verbs are divided into four conjugations, according as the infinitive ending is *-áre*, accented *-ére*, unaccented *-ere* (or *-rre*), or *-íre*. Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations are, however, inflected just alike.

a. The final *e* of the infinitive may be dropped before any word except one beginning with *s* impure.*

* Cf. **10**, *b*; **14**, *b*. Italians find it hard to pronounce three consecutive consonants of which the middle one is *s*.

THE REGULAR VERB.

59. *Parlâre*, "to speak," will serve as a model for the first conjugation. All compound tenses are omitted (see **56**):—

Infinitive and Participles.

Parlâre, parlândo, parlâto.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
Pârlo,	*Parlâva,*	*Parlâi,*	*Parlerò,*
pârli,	*parlâvi,*	*parlâsti,*	*parlerâi,*
pârla,	*parlâva,*	*parlò,*	*parlerà,*
parliâmo,	*parlavâmo,*	*parlâmmo,*	*parlerémo,*
parlâte,	*parlavâte,*	*parlâste,*	*parleréte,*
pârlano.	*parlâvano.*	*parlârono.*	*parlerânno.*

Imperative.	Subjunctive.		Conditional
	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	Pârli,	*Parlâssi,*	*Parlerêi,*
Pârla,	*pârli,*	*parlâssi,*	*parlerêsti,*
	pârli,	*parlâsse,*	*parlerèbbe,*
parliâmo,	*parliâmo,*	*parlâssimo,*	*parlerèmmo,*
parlâte.	*parliâte,*	*parlâste,*	*parleréste,*
	pârlino.	*parlâssero.*	*parlerèbbero.*

a. Verbs whose infinitives end in *-care* or *-gare* insert *h* after the *c* or *g* in all forms where those letters precede *e* or *i*: as *pâghi* (*pagâre*), "let him pay"; *cercherò* (*cercâre*), "I shall search." Verbs in *-ciare* and *-giare* drop the *i* before *e* or *i*: as *mangi* (*mangiâre*), "thou eatest"; *comincerà** (*cominciâre*), "he will

* Some writers retain the *i* before *e*: as *comincierà*.

begin." But all other verbs in *-iare* drop the *i* only before another *i*: as *picchi* (*picchiáre*), "let him strike"; *pigli* (*pigliáre*), "thou takest"; but *picchierà*, *piglierêi*.

b. The verbs *giocáre*, *rotáre*, *sonáre* generally change *o* of the stem into *uo* in all forms where that vowel is accented: as *suôni*, "let him play"; *giuôcano*, "they play." *Rinnováre* and *tonáre* may make the same change. The *u* is sometimes used throughout.

60. Verbs of the second and third conjugations * are inflected like *crédere*, "to believe":—

Infinitive and Participles.

Crédere, *credêndo*, *credúto*.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
Crédo,	*Credéva*,	*Credéi* (*credêtti*),	*Crederò*,
crédi,	*credévi*,	*credésti*,	*crederài*,
créde,	*credéva*,	*credè* (*credêtte*),	*crederà*,
crediámo,	*credevámo*,	*credémmo*,	*crederémo*,
credéte,	*credeváte*,	*credéste*,	*crederéte*,
crédono.	*credévano*.	*credêrono* (*credêttero*).	*crederánno*.

Imperative.	Subjunctive.		Conditional.
	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	Créda,	*Credéssi*,	*Crederêi*,
Crédi,	*créda*,	*credéssi*,	*crederésti*,
	créda,	*credésse*,	*crederêbbe*,
crediámo,	*crediámo*,	*credéssimo*,	*crederémmo*,
credéte.	*crediáte*,	*credéste*,	*crederéste*,
	crédano.	*credéssero*.	*crederêbbero*.

* Most grammars and dictionaries class these two together as the "second conjugation."

Báttere, compêtere, convêrgere, divêrgere, lúcere, méscere, miêtere, páscere, prúdere, ripêtere, strídere, têssere, tóndere, and their compounds do not have in the preterite the forms in parentheses.

Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert after the *c* or *g* an *i* before the *u* of the past participle, but not before the *o* or *a* of the singular or third person plural of the present indicative or subjunctive: as *méscere; mésco, mésci, mésce, mesciámo, mescéte, méscono; mésca,* etc., *méscano; mesciúto.*

61. Most verbs of the fourth conjugation* are inflected like *finíre,* "to finish":—

Infinitive and Participles.

Finíre, finêndo, finíto.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
Finísco,	*Finíva,*	*Finíi,*	*Finirò,*
finísci,	*finívi,*	*finísti,*	*finirài,*
finísce,	*finíva,*	*finì,*	*finirà,*
finiámo,	*finivámo,*	*finímmo,*	*finirémo,*
finíte,	*finiváte,*	*finíste,*	*finiréte,*
finíscono.	*finívano.*	*finírono.*	*finiránno.*

Imperative.	Subjunctive.		Conditional.
	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	Finísca,	*Finíssi,*	*Finirêi,*
Finísci,	*finísca,*	*finíssi,*	*finirésti,*
	finísca,	*finísse,*	*finirêbbe,*
finiámo,	*finiámo,*	*finíssimo,*	*finirémmo,*
finíte.	*finiáte,*	*finíste,*	*finiréste.*
	finíscano.	*finíssero.*	*finirêbbero.*

Though inflected like *finíre* in all other parts, *dormíre, fuggíre,*† *pentíre, sentíre, servíre, vestíre* are always, *abor-*

* Most grammars and dictionaries call this the "third conjugation."

† *Fuggíre* inserts no extra *i* (see last sentence of **60**).

rire, *bollire*, and verbs in *-vertire* are generally, and *assorbire*, *inghiottire*, *mentire*, *nutrire*, *tossire* are often, in the present indicative, imperative, and subjunctive, conjugated after the model below. *Partire* and *sortire* are, when transitive, inflected like *finire*, when intransitive, like *sentire*.*

Indicative.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.
Sênto,		*Sênta,*
sênti,	*Sênti,*	*sênta,*
sênte,		*sênta,*
sentiámo,	*sentiámo,*	*sentiámo,*
sentite,	*sentite.*	*sentiáte,*
sêntono.		*sêntano.*

62. The present participle of all verbs is invariable.

Ex.: *Stavámo parlándo*, we were speaking.

63. In all conjugations a form of the first person singular of the imperfect indicative ending in *o* instead of *a* is nearly always used in conversation, and occurs often in the works of modern authors: as *leggévo*, "I was reading."

a. In popular speech the first person plural of all tenses is generally replaced by the third person singular preceded by *si*: *nói áltri si créde*, "we believe"; *nói si êra venúti*, "we had come"; *ci si decíse*, "we decided (ourselves)."

b. Final *o* of the third person plural is frequently omitted: as *párlan di lúi*, "they speak of him." Forms in *-ánno* sometimes drop *-no*: as *dirán tútto*, "they will tell everything."

c. The imperfect indicative endings *-avámo*, *-aváte*, *-evámo*, *-eváte*, *-ivámo*, *-iváte* are often pronounced *-ávamo*, *-ávate*, etc.

d. Occasionally, especially in poetry, *-at-* is omitted from the ending of the past participle of the first conjugation: *destáto* = *désto*.

* Compounds are conjugated like their simple verbs.

THE IRREGULAR VERB.

64. Certain parts of Italian irregular verbs are always regular: the example given below will show which they are. *Êssere* (see **53**, *a*) is an exception to all rules.

65. Many irregular verbs that belong or once belonged to the third conjugation have the infinitive contracted (*fáre* for *fácere*, *díre* for *dícere*, *condúrre* for *condúcere*): in this case the future and conditional are formed from this contracted infinitive (*farò*, *dirêi*, *condurrêbbe*), while the present participle, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and preterite are formed from the uncontracted stem (*facêndo*, *dicéva*, *conduciámo*).

66. *Pórre* (for *pónere*), "to put," a verb of the third conjugation, will serve to show which are the regular and which the irregular parts of irregular verbs: the forms printed in italics are regular in all verbs except *dáre*, *díre*, *êssere*, *fáre*, *stáre*; those in Roman type may be irregular.

Infinitive and Participles.

Pórre, *ponêndo*, pósto.

Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
Póngo,	*Ponéva*,	Pósi,	Porrò,
póni,	*ponévi*,	*ponésti*,†	porrái,
póne,	*ponéva*,	póse,	porrà,
poniámo,	*ponevámo*,	*ponémmo*,†	porrémo,
ponéte,*	*poneváte*,	*ponéste*,†	porréte,
póngono.	*ponévano*.	pósero.	porránno.

* See **66**, 4. † See **66**, 3.

Imperative	Subjunctive.		Conditional.
	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	Pónga,	*Ponéssi,**	Porrêi,
Póni,	pónga,	*ponéssi,*	porrésti,
	pónga,	*ponésse,*	porrêbbe,
poniámo,	poniámo,	*ponéssimo,*	porrémmo,
ponéte.	poniáte,	*ponéste,*	porréste,
	póngano.	*ponéssero.*	porrêbbero.

It will be seen that the present participle, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and preterite indicative are always regular.

(1) *Dáre* and *stáre* have in the future and conditional *darò, darêi; starò, starêi.* Otherwise the only irregularity in the future and conditional is that they are contracted in many verbs even when the infinitive is uncontracted: as *vedére,* "to see," *vedrò; venire,* "to come," *verrêi.*

(2) From the first person singular of the preterite the other irregular persons can be constructed, the third person singular by changing the ending *i* to *e,* the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular.†

(3) The *regular* persons of the preterite and the whole imperfect subjunctive are slightly irregular in *dáre* and *stáre,* which substitute *e* for *a* in those forms (*désti, démmo, déste, déssi; stésti, stémmo, stéste, stéssi*).

(4) *Díre* (for *dícere*) and *fáre* (for *fácere*) have *díte* and *fáte* in the second person plural of the present indicative.

a. Verbs whose stem ends in *l, n,* or *r* often drop final *e* or *i* in the singular of the present indicative and imperative: as *non vuol andáre,* "he will not go"; *viên qui,* "come here." See also **63**, *a, b, c.*

---

* See **66**, 3. † This rule applies only to *irregular* preterites.

b. The three forms of the imperative are exactly like the corresponding persons of the present indicative, except in *avére*, *sapére*, and *volére*, where they follow the subjunctive (*ábbi*, *abbiámo*, *abbiáte*; *sáppi*, *sappiámo*, *sappiáte*; *vógli*, *vogliámo*, *vogliáte*), and in *andáre*, *dáre*, *dire*, *fáre*, and *stáre*, which have in the singular *va'*, *da'*, *di'*, *fa'*, *sta'*.

c. The third person plural of the present indicative can always be constructed from the first person singular, from which can be formed also the whole present subjunctive except the first and second persons plural: these come from the first person plural of the present indicative. Exceptions to this rule are *andáre*, *avére*, *dáre*, *fáre*, *sapére*, and *stáre*, which have in the third person plural of the present indicative *vánno*, *hánno*, *dánno*, *fánno*, *sánno*, *stánno*; while *avére*, *dáre*, *sapére*, and *stáre* have in the present subjunctive *ábbia*, *dia*, *sáppia*, *stia*.

67. With the aid of the above notes any verb except *êssere* can be constructed from the infinitive, the participles (the present participle often being necessary to show the uncontracted form of the infinitive), the present indicative, and the first person singular of the preterite and future. A list of irregular verbs begins on page 88.

a. In general, compound verbs not differing in conjugation from their simple verbs will be omitted from this list. All compounds of *dáre* and *fáre* are accented on the same syllable as the simple verbs: as *fa*, "he does"; *disfà*, "he undoes."

The compounds of *stáre* demand special mention: *ristáre*, *soprastáre*, *sottostáre*, *sovrastáre* are inflected like *stáre* (*ristà soprastêtti*, *sottostiano*); *distáre* has no present participle, is regular in the present of all moods (*disto*, etc.), but otherwise is inflected like *stáre* (*distêtti*, etc.); *constáre*, *contrastáre*, *instáre*, *ostáre*, *prestáre*, *restáre*, *sostáre* are regular throughout (*cônsta*, *contrástano*, *instái*, *ostárono*, *presterò*, *rêsti*, *sostássi*).

68. In old Italian and in poetry both regular and irregular verbs differ in many ways from the normal types: some of the commonest variations are given below.

a. In the first and third persons singular and the third person plural of the imperfect indicative *v* is often dropped, but never in the first conjugation: *voléva* = *voléa* (also *volìa*); *finìvano* = *finìano*. Some of these forms are not uncommon in modern prose.

b. The conditional endings *-êi, -êbbe, -êbbero* are generally replaced in poetry by *-ìa, -ìa, -ìano: crederêi* = *crederìa*.

c. The future endings *-ò, -ánno* are sometimes replaced by *-ággio* or *-ábbo, -ággiono* or *-ábbono: amerò* = *amerággio; ameránno* = *amerábbono*.

d. In the third person plural of the preterite *-no* or *-ono* is often dropped: *amárono* = *amâro* or *amâr* (also *amórno, amónno*). In the third person singular we find *amáo, credéo, sentìo*.

e. Final *-ero* is often replaced by *-ono: avrêbbero* = *avrêbbono*.

f. In the first person plural final *o* is often dropped, and then the *m* sometimes becomes *n*: *andiámo* = *andiám* or *andián*.

g. In the first person plural of the present indicative *-iámo* may be replaced by *-ámo, -émo,* or *-ìmo,* according to the conjugation.

h. Final *-ìano,* wherever it occurs (also *-éano* in the imperfect), may be replaced by *-ìeno* or *-iêno*: *avévano* = *aviêno*.

i. At the end of a word we often find *e* for *i,* sometimes *i* for *e*: *pênsi* = *pênse; ascoltáte* = *ascoltáti*.

j. *E* is sometimes added to a word ending in an accented vowel: *amò* = *amôe*.

EXERCISE 15.

Tánto all' andáre quánto al tornáre dálla scuôla, Enrico dà[1] nôia a tútti; picchia i bambíni più piccíni di lúi, tíra i sássi a quálche pôvero cáne che se ne va[2] tranquillaménte pel súo viággio, rómpe le piánte del giardíno che dêve[3] traversáre per andáre a scuôla o per tornáre a cása; insómma è un contínuo far malánni.

Il bábbo va[2] a lavoráre la mattína prêsto; la mámma è maláta, e quíndi non lo pôssono[4] accompagnáre. L' áltra mattína però gli seguì brútta. Méntre andáva a scuôla, víde[5] avánti a sè un bambíno piccíno, túttο vestíto bêne, e che paréva sólo; Enríco, sénza far tánti discórsi, arríva di diêtro, gli píglia il cappêllo e gliélo bútta in úna fónte che êra lì vicína. Il pôvero bambíno si métte a piángere, e Enríco cominciò a scappáre. Ma quésta vôlta avéva fátto[6] mále i suôi cónti: il bambíno non êra sólo, lo accompagnáva un bel can barbóne. I can barbóni hánno tánto intendiménto, che fánno[6] áltre côse ben più meravigliόse che andáre ad accompagnáre a scuôla un bambíno. Il barbóne dúnque, cóme víde[5] il súo padroncíno assalíto, vía diêtro ad Enríco che fuggíva; in un áttimo lo raggiúnse,[7] e agguantátagli úna gámba, lo badáva a môrdere[8]; Enríco urláva, ma il cáne non lo lasciò finchè un signóre, che avéva vísto[5] túttа la scêna, non lo minacciò col bastóne. Enríco êbbe stracciáti i calzóni, laceráta la cárne délla gámba, e fu pôi punίto dal maêstro e dái genitóri; ma da quel giórno a quésta párte non dà[1] più nôia a nessúno, avêndo vedúto che un cáne stésso gli avéva insegnáto cóme fósse mále molestáre gli áltri.

[1] From *dáre*, **92**, 3. [2] *Andáre, andársene*, **92**, 1. [3] *Dovére*, **92**, 8. [4] *Potére*, **92**, 21. [5] *Vedére*, **92**, 10. [6] *Fáre*, **92**, 2. [7] *Raggiúngere*, **92**, 138. [8] He kept biting him.

EXERCISE 16.

Have you ever observed what[1] happens when a pot of water boils at the fire? The steam of the water rises like so-much smoke, and remains attached to the lid that covers the pot; when this steam has begun to cool, it becomes[2] water once-more,[3] and falls[3] down again[3] drop by drop. In-like-manner[4] it happens with[5] the vapors which the sun and the heat lift from the earth. The vapors rise, collect themselves on[6] high in little bubbles, and thus united they form clouds.[7] When these clouds are very-much[8] charged with[9] moisture, they resolve themselves into water; and

the water, falling[3] down again[3] in drops where the wind carries it, forms rain.[7] So[10] rain[7] is-only[11] steam turned-back-into[12] water. The cloud, too,[13] is-only[11] a quantity of steam not-very[14] dense and not-very[14] high[15] in the air. This vapor, by[16] remaining low, prevents us sometimes from-seeing[17] objects[7] even at a[16] small distance from us.

[1] *Quéllo che.* [2] To become once more = *ritorndre.* [3] To fall again = *ricascâre.* [4] *Medesimamênte.* [5] *Per.* [6] *In.* [7] See **13**, *b.* [8] *Mólto.* [9] *Di.* [10] *Dúnque.* [11] *Non è áltro che.* [12] *Torndto.* [13] *Pôi.* [14] *Pôco.* [15] *Sollevâto.* [16] Omit. [17] *Di vedêre.*

MOODS AND TENSES.

69. The English present participle used as subject, predicate nominative, or direct object of a verb must be rendered in Italian by the infinitive, nearly always preceded by the definite article.

Ex.: *Mi pidce il viaggidre*, I like travelling.
Rifârsela cógli animâli è da sciôcchi, taking vengeance on animals is folly.
La nôstra prima cúra fu il cercâre úna pensiône, our first care was hunting up a boarding-house.
Ôdio lo studiâre, I hate studying.

70. The English present participle preceded by a preposition is translated as follows: (1) If the preposition is a necessary part of the thought, it is expressed in Italian, and the English present participle is rendered by the infinitive with the definite article. This article is, however, omitted (unless it would be used in English) after the prepositions *di*, "of"; *dópo di*, "after"; *invéce di*, "instead of"; *prima di*, "before"; *sénza*, "without."

Ex.: *Óltre il fáre scarabócchi scrîve mále*, **besides** making blots he writes badly.
Parlái cóntra il trárre útile di quélla disgrázia, I spoke **against** utilizing that misfortune.
Il vízio di fumáre, the habit **of** smoking.
Ho l' abitúdine di coricármi tárdi, I am in the habit **of** going to bed late.
Invéce di dírmi tútto, **instead of** telling me everything.
Prima di morire, **before** dying.
Parliámo sénza riflettere, we speak **without** thinking.

(2) If in English the omission of the preposition, although it made the construction awkward, would not essentially change the meaning, the phrase is rendered in Italian by the present participle without any preposition.

Ex.: *Studiándo si impára*, (through) studying we learn.
Dovrêi corrispóndere álla súa cortesía ascoltándola, I ought to acknowledge her courtesy (by) listening to her.
Partêndo incontrò un amíco, (on) going away he met a friend.
Copiándo non fa errôri, (in) copying he makes no mistakes.

(3) "To amuse one's self by . . ." and "to weary one's self by . . ." are *divertírsi a* . . . and *affannársi a* . . . with the infinitive: as *si divêrte a tirár sássi*, "he amuses himself throwing stones." Some other verbs often take this construction.

71. Following are some other rules for the use of the infinitive and participles.

a. When any verb is used as an auxiliary, the mood and tense are expressed in that verb, and not in the dependent infinitive (see **57**).

Ex.: *Avrêi potúto fárlo*, I could have done it.

b. After *fáre*, "to make" or "to have" (= "to cause"), *sentíre* and *udíre*, "to hear," and *vedére* "to see," the Italian present

infinitive is used to render an English past participle. After *lasciáre*, "to let," and often after the preposition *da* an Italian active infinitive is used to translate a passive one in English.

Ex.: *Si fa capíre*, he makes himself understood.
Farò fáre un pàio di scárpe, I shall have a pair of shoes made.
L' ho sentíto díre, I have heard it said.
Lo víde ammazzáre, he saw him killed.
Si lásscia ingannáre, he lets himself be deceived.
Non c' è niênte da fáre, there is nothing to be done.

c. The Italian past participle is inflected like any other adjective. The present participle is invariable. When in English the present participle is used adjectively, without any verbal force whatsoever, it is translated, not by the participle, but by a verbal adjective, which can be formed from almost any Italian verb by changing the infinitive ending into *-ánte* for the first conjugation, and into *-ênte* for the others. This adjective may be used substantively. Some writers have used it as a participle.

Ex.: *Quésti vási sóno rótti*, these vases are broken.
La dônna sta cucêndo, the woman is sewing.
Stávano parlándo, they were speaking.
Un animále parlánte, a speaking animal.
Ácqua bollênte, boiling water; *dúe amánti*, two lovers.

d. A whole protasis is often expressed in Italian by a present participle, or by an infinitive with *a*.

Ex.: *Andándovi lo vedrêbbe*, if he went there, he would see it.
A bucársi ésce il sángue, if you prick yourself, blood comes.

e. Writers sometimes use, instead of a clause in indirect discourse, an infinitive followed by the word that would have been subject of the clause.

Ex.: *Dísse éssere quésto l' uômo che cercávamo*, he said this was the man we were looking for.

72. In negative commands the infinitive is always used instead of the second person singular of the imperative.

Ex.: *Trôvalo*, find it; *non lo trovâre*, do not find it.

73. When an action is represented as having taken place and still continuing, the English uses the perfect or pluperfect tense, the Italian the present or imperfect.

Ex.: *Stúdio l' italiâno da ôtto mési*, I have studied Italian for eight months.

74. In subordinate clauses referring to the future and introduced by a conjunction of time, where the present is often used in English, the future tense must be employed in Italian.

Ex.: *Quándo vi andrò, gliélo dirò*, when I go there, I'll tell him.

a. The future is often used, without any idea of future time, to express probability.

Ex.: *Sarà uscíto*, he has probably gone out.
Avrà mólto dendro, he probably has a great deal of money.

75. The difference between the imperfect and the preterite is this: the preterite is used of an event that occurred at a definite date in the past, the imperfect is used in a description or in speaking of an accessory circumstance or an habitual action in past time — the preterite is a narrative, the imperfect a descriptive tense. The preterite perfect is used (instead of the pluperfect) only after conjunctions meaning "as soon as" (*appéna che, súbito che, tôsto che*), and sometimes after *dópo che*, "after."*

* It is used also in phrases like: *in cínque minúti êbbe finíta la lêttera*, "in five minutes he had the letter finished."

Ex.: *Entrò mèntre dormivámo*, he came in while we slept.
Facévo così ógni mattína, I did so every morning.
Lo féce l' ánno scórso, he did it last year.
Tósto che l' èbbe vísto, uscì, as soon as he had seen it, he went

a. In conversation the perfect is often used instead of the preterite, when the event is not remote.

Ex.: *Vi sóno andáto iéri*, I went there yesterday.

76. The conditional, like the English "should" and "would," has two uses: in indirect discourse after a principal verb in a past tense it expresses the tense which in direct discourse would be future;* in the conclusion of a conditional sentence it is used when the protasis is (or, if expressed, would be) in the imperfect subjunctive (see **77**).

Ex.: *Dísse che lo farèbbe*, he said he would do it.
Se fósse véro lo crederêi, if it were true, I should believe it.
Quésta cása mi converrèbbe, this house would suit me.

77. When a condition is contrary to fact, or consists of a more or less unlikely supposition referring to future time,† the protasis is in the imperfect (or pluperfect) subjunctive, the apodosis in the conditional;‡ otherwise both protasis and apodosis are in the indicative.

Ex.: *Se l' avéssi te lo darêi*, if I had it, I should give it thee.
Se fósse torndto l' avrêi vedúto, if he had returned, I should have seen him.
Se venísse nói ce ne andrémmo, if he came, we should go.
Se vi andássi morrêi, if I should go there, I should die.

---

* The perfect of the future or the conditional is sometimes used where the simple tense would be expected: *disse che non l' avrèbbe fátto più*, "he said he would do it no more."

† Rendered in English by the imperfect, or by the auxiliary "should."

‡ The imperfect indicative is occasionally used to replace the imperfect or pluperfect subjunctive of the protasis and the conditional of the apodosis.

Se non è véro è ben trovàto, if it isn't true, it's a good invention.
Se lo fèce sarà punìto, if he did it, he will be punished.

a. The missing persons of the imperative are supplied from the present subjunctive. The imperfect subjunctive is used to express a wish that is not likely to be realized.

Ex.: *Si accòmodi*, be seated (sing.); *stìano zìtti*, be quiet (plur.).
Sìa púre, be it so; *vèngano súbito*, let them come at once.
Fósse púre, would it were so!

b. When a relative clause restricts its antecedent to one of all its possible conditions or actions, the verb of that relative clause is in the subjunctive, — the present subjunctive if the verb on which it depends be present or future, the imperfect if it be past or conditional.

Ex.: *Non c' è animàle più bellìno d' un gàtto giòvane che fàccia il chiàsso*, there is no animal prettier than a kitten that is at play.
Dóve troverète un giòvine che spòsi vói, where will you find a young man who will marry *you?*
Vorrèi vedère un bel quàdro che non fósse antìco, I should like to see a fine picture that is not old.

c. The verb of a subordinate clause depending on an impersonal verb, on a superlative, or on one of the words "first," "last," and "only" is in the subjunctive. This rule does not apply to reflexive verbs, nor to affirmative phrases meaning "it is true" or "it is because."

Ex.: *Bisognò ch' io vi andàssi*, I had to go there.
È giùsto che siano puniti, it's right they should be punished.
Il più bèllo ch' io conósca, the finest that I know.
Si véde che non è così, you see it isn't so.
È véro che ci sóno stàto, it's true that I've been there.

d. The subjunctive is used after all conjunctions meaning "although," "as if," "unless," "provided that," "in order that," "in such a way that" (denoting purpose), "before," "until" (referring to future), "whenever," "wherever," "without."

Ex.: *Benchè stia nascósto, lo troverò, dovúnque sía*, although he be hidden, I shall find him, wherever he is.

Partirò a méno che égli non vénga, I shall go unless he comes.

Lo fèce perchè io venissi, he did it that I might come.

La divíse in módo che le dúe párti fóssero ugudli, he divided it in such a way that the two parts should be equal.

Aspétta finchè io tórni, wait until I return.

e. The subjunctive is used after the indefinite words and phrases *quále che, qualúnque, chiúnque, checchè, per quánto.*

Ex.: *Chiúnque vénga*, whoever comes.

Qualúnque disgrázia che succêda, whatever misfortune happens.

Per quánte vôlte ci váda, however many times I go there.

Per quánto ricco égli sía, however rich he may be.

f. The verb of an indirect question is nearly always in the subjunctive when it depends on a main verb either in a past tense or in the conditional.

Ex.: *Domándano se il re è mórto*, they ask whether the king is dead.

Domandò se il pádre fósse uscito, he asked whether his father was out.

g. In a clause dependent on a verb of saying the subjunctive is used if the main verb is negative, or interrogative, or in the conditional, or in a past tense. It is generally not used, however, after an affirmative verb in a past tense when the author himself wishes to imply that the indirect statement is true.

Ex.: *Dice che la cósa è chiarissima*, he says the thing is perfectly clear.

Non díco che quésto sía véro, I don't say this is true.

Dissero che lo zío fósse ammaláto, they said their uncle was ill.

Gli dissi che mi chiamáva Enríco, I told him my name was Henry.

h. The subjunctive is used after verbs expressing causation, concession, desire, emotion, prevention, and uncertainty: *i.e.*, after verbs of bringing about; granting, permitting; commanding, hoping, requesting, wishing; fearing, regretting, rejoicing; forbidding, hindering; being ignorant, denying, disbelieving, doubting, expecting, pretending, supposing, suspecting, thinking. But *speráre*, "to hope," very often does not take the subjunctive.

Ex.: *Non so chi siano*, I don't know who they are.
Vorrêi che non fósse accadúto, I wish it had not happened.
Supponiámo che sia prováto, let us suppose that it is proved.
Spêro che verrà, I hope he will come.

i. *Se*, "if," is occasionally omitted before an imperfect subjunctive; in this case the subject, if expressed, must follow the verb.

Ex.: *Sarêi felice venísse égli*, I should be happy, should he come.

EXERCISE 17.

La mámma di Alfrédo avéva lasciáto un anêllo d' ôro sul cas settóne. Alfrédo vôlle[1] métterselo in díto. Che giudízio! pretêndere che l' anêllo délla mámma pôssa[2] stáre in un ditíno d' un fanciúllo! Se lo míse[3] nel díto grôsso e pôi s' affacciò álla finêstra; l' anêllo cascò di sótto, e non se ne sêppe[4] più núlla. La mámma cérca l' anêllo, ma non c' êra più; cérca di qui, di là, di sópra, cérca per túttо, nè l' anêllo si può[2] trováre. Allóra chiáma Alfrédo e gli dice[5]:—Bambíno, dímmi[6] la verità; hái préso[7] tu il mío anêllo? l' hái pêrso[8] tu?—Alfrédo, cattívo, disse[5] di no. La mámma si ricordáva bêne d' avérlo lasciáto nel vassoíno sul cassettóne. Non credéva Alfrédo capáce di dir le bugíe, quíndi sospettò che qualcúno l' avésse rubáto. Ci andáva in cása[9] úna bambína, figliuôla d' un antíco súo servitóre, e il sospêtto cádde[10] sópra quésta pôvera creatúra. La mámma di Alfrédo non la vôlle[1] più in cása; ma l' allontanò con bêlla maniêra, e nessúno si avvíde[11] di núlla, perchè quélla signóra êra buôna. Però la

bugía di Alfrédo féce[12] sì che súa mádre credésse ládra quélla pôvera bambína. Dío perdóni Alfrédo, Dío gl' ispíri di rimediáre a sì brútta azióne; váda,[13] si bútti ái piêdi délla mámma, le raccónti tútto, e non commétta mái più di quéste azionácce.

[1] From *volére*, **92**, 19. [2] *Potére*, **92**, 21. [3] *Méttere*, **92**, 73. [4] *Sapére*, **92**, 6. [5] *Dire*, **92**, 164. [6] *Dire:* see **48**, *d.* [7] *Prêndere*, **92**, 87. [8] *Pêrdere*, **92**, 83. [9] There used to come to the house. [10] *Cadére*, **92**, 7. [11] *Avvedérsi*, **92**, 10. [12] *Fâre*, **92**, 2. [13] *Andâre*, **92**, 1.

EXERCISE 18.

We inhabit the earth; but not all the earth has the same name everywhere: the earth is-divided[1] into five parts, and every part has its name. The five parts of the earth are-called[1]: Europe, Asia, Africa, America, Oceanica. Imagine you-cut-open[2] the earth in the middle and place[3] it on a table, in-such-a-way[4] that the inside shall-rest[5] on the table, and the outside shall-present[5] itself to your eyes. You will have two circles: in the circle that lies[6] at your right are[7] Europe, Asia, Africa, and a part of Oceanica; in the circle that lies[6] on-the[8] left are[7] America and the other part of Oceanica. But the ancients did[9] not[10] believe that the earth was round, nor did[9] they know that its parts were five. They thought that the earth was flat and surrounded by the sea; they knew, moreover,[11] only[12] three parts: Europe, Asia, Africa. They never[13] would have dreamed that the earth was round, and that on[14] the side opposite to the-one[15] which they inhabited there[16] was inhabited land. America was discovered 395 years ago by an Italian who was-called[1] Christopher Columbus. Christopher Columbus was-born[17] in a village near Genoa in 1447. His parents were poor; his father earned hardly enough-to[14] support the family. However, by-dint[18] of sacrifices they had[19] him study; and as[20] Christopher studied willingly, he grew up a fine[21] boy. When it was time[22] to-choose[23] a profession, he chose to-be-a[24] sailor. In[8] those times they believed that the world ended

after Africa; but Columbus, on-the-contrary,[25] persuaded himself that the world ought[26] not[10] to[26] end there, and that by continuing to sail, one[1] ought[26] to[26] turn and come-back to the same point.

[1] See **55**. [2] *Di aprire.* [3] *Di posáre.* [4] *In módo.* [5] See **77**, *d.* [6] Use *restáre.* [7] *C' è.* [8] *A.* [9] See **54**, *g.* [10] *Non*, "not," must precede the verb. [11] *Pói.* [12] See **82**. [13] See **83**. [14] *Da.* [15] *Quélla.* [16] *Vi.* [17] To be born = *náscere*, **92**, **77**. [18] *A fórza.* [19] Use *fáre*, **92**, 2. [20] *Perchè.* [21] *Brávo.* [22] Use def. article. [23] *Di scégliere.* [24] *Di fáre il.* [25] *Invéce.* [26] See **57**.

CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS.

CONJUNCTIONS.

78. The principal conjunctions are:—

After, *dópo che.*
Also, *ánche, púre.*
Although, *benchè, sebbène, non ostánte che.*
And, *e.*
As, *cóme, quánto* (after *tánto*).
As (= since), *siccóme, poichè.*
As fast as, *via via che.*
As if, *cóme se, quási.*
As long as, *finchè.*
As well as, *cóme ánco.*
Because, *perchè.*
Before, *prima che, avánti che.*
Both . . . and, *e . . . e.*
But, *ma.*
Either . . . or, *o . . . o.*
Even if, *ánche se, ancorchè.*
Except that, *se non che.*
For, *chè.*
Granting that, *dáto che.*
However (= nevertheless), *però, púre.*
However (before an adj.), *qualúnque, per quánto.*
If, *se* (occasionally *quándo, óve*).
In case, *cáso.*
In order that, *perchè, acciochè, affinchè.*
Much less, *non che.*
Neither . . . nor, *nè . . . nè.*
Nevertheless, *tuttavía, nondiméno, però.*
Nor, *nè, nemméno, neppúre.*
Nor . . . either, *nemméno, neppúre.*
Nor even, *neánche, neppúre.*
Not to say . . . but even, *non che . . . ma.*
Or, *o, ovvéro, ossía.*
Or else, *ossía.*
Provided that, *purchè.*
Rather, *ánzi.*
Since (temporal), *dacchè.*

Since (causal), *poichè, siccóme.*
So, *dúnque, adúnque.*
So that (result), *di módo che, sicchè.*
So that (= in order that), *perchè.*
Than, *che.*
That, *che.*
That (= in order that), *perchè.*
Then, *dúnque.*
Therefore, *dúnque, però, perciò, adúnque* (at the beginning of a clause).
Too, *púre, ánche.*
Unless, *a méno che non, eccétto che non, sénza che.*
Until, *finchè non.*
When, *quándo.*
Whence, *dónde.*
Where, *dóve, óve, là dóve.*
Wherever, *dovúnque.*
Whether, *se.*
While, *méntre, méntre che.*

The final vowel of *ánche, che, dóve, neppúre,* and *óve* is generally elided before *e* or *i.*

a. Of the above conjunctions *acciochè, affinchè, a méno che non, ancorchè, avánti che, benchè, cáso, cóme se, dáto che, dovúnque, eccétto che non, non ostánte che, perchè* meaning "in order that," *per quánto, prima che, purchè, qualúnque, quási, sebbène,* and *sénza che* are followed by the subjunctive. For the use of *che,* "that," with the subjunctive, see **77**, *c, g, h.* *Cóme* is occasionally used for *cóme se,* and then it takes the subjunctive. *Finchè* when referring to the future sometimes has the sense of *finchè non,* and then it generally takes the subjunctive. *Se* is followed by the subjunctive when it introduces an indirect question or statement dependent on a verb in a past tense, or a condition contrary to fact. *Quándo* and *óve,* meaning "if," frequently take the subjunctive when *se* would not. — For examples, see **77**, *c, d, f, g, h.*

b. *Che* cannot be omitted in Italian as "that" is in English:* as *dísse che fósse véro,* "he said it was true." *Se* can be omitted before an imperfect subjunctive: see **77**, *i.*

* It is omitted, however, in the following peculiarly Italian construction: *il ragázzo paréva fósse felice,* "the boy seemed to be happy"; that is, between a verb of seeming and the subjunctive dependent on it, when in English the construction would be a verb of seeming with a dependent infinitive. It is occasionally omitted also after verbs of wishing, hoping, and fearing: as *spéro mi scríva présto,* "I hope you will write to me soon."

c. *E* and *o* are often written *ed* and *od* before a vowel.

Ex.: *Mio pádre ed ío*, my father and I.

d. Between a verb of motion and an infinitive "and" is rendered by the preposition *a*.

Ex.: *Andrò a cercárlo*, I'll go and look for it.

e. When *ánche*, "also" or "too," relates to a personal pronoun, the disjunctive form of that pronoun must follow *ánche*, even if some form of the same pronoun has already been expressed.

Ex.: *Andrémo ánche nói*, we shall go too.
Párte anch' égli, he goes away too.
Trovái ánche lúi, I found him too.
Vénnero anch' éssi, they came too.
Lo or *me lo diède anche a me*, he gave it to me too.
Ti pídce ánche a te, you like it too.

PREPOSITIONS.

79. The principal prepositions are:—

About (= approximately), *circa*.
About (= around), *intórno a, attórno a*.
Above, *sópra*.
According to, *secóndo*.
After, *dópo, dópo di*.
Against, *cóntra, cóntro*.
Along, *lúngo*.
Among, *fra, tra*.
Around, *intórno a, attórno a*.
As far as, *fino a, sino a*.
As for, *per, quánto a, in quánto a*.
As to, *rispétto a*.
At, *a*.
Because of, *per motívo di*.
Before (time), *prima di, innánzi*.
Before (place), *davánti a, innánzi*.
Behind, *diétro*.
Below, *sótto*.
Beside (place), *accánto a*.
Besides, beside (= in addition to), *óltre*.
Between, *fra, tra*.
Beyond, *óltre, al di là di*.
By, *da, accánto a* (= beside).
By means of, *per mézzo di*.
During, *durante*.
Except, *tránne, eccétto, fuóri di*.
For, *per*.
From, *da, fin da*.
In, *in*.
In front of, *davánti a, innánzi*.

Inside of, *déntro di.*
Instead of, *invéce di.*
In the midst of, *in mézzo a.*
Into, *in.*
Near, *vicíno a.*
Of, *di.*
On, *su* (before a vowel, *sur*), *sópra.*
On this side of, *al di qua di.*
On to, *su* (before vowels, *sur*), *sópra.*
Opposite, *dirimpétto a.*
Out of, *da, di, fuòri di.*
Outside of, *fuòri di.*
Over, *sópra.*
Round and round, *tórno tórno a.*
Since, *da.*
To, *a*
Toward, *vêrso.*
Through, *per.*
Under, *sótto.*
Upon, *su* (before vowels, *sur*), *sópra.*
Up to, *fino a, síno a.*
With, *con.*
Within, *fra, tra.*
Within (= inside of), *déntro di.*
Without, *sénza.*
Without (= outside of), *fuòri di.*

When governing a personal pronoun *cóntra, diêtro, dópo, sénza, sópra, sótto,* and often *fra* and *vêrso* take *di* after them: as *sénza di me,* "without me"; *fra di lóro,* "among themselves." After *con, in, per,* a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i**: as *la stráda,* "the street"; *in istráda,* "in the street."

a. "To" before the name of a country, after a verb of motion, is *in.*

Ex.: *Andiámo in Fráncia,* let us go to France.

b. "To" before an infinitive is rendered in Italian as follows: (1) After the verbs *bastáre,* "suffice"; *bisognáre,* "need"; *convenire,* "suit"; *desideráre,* "desire"; *dovére,* "must," "ought"; *fáre,* "make"; *lasciáre,* "let"; *parére,* "seem"; *potére,* "can," "be able"; *sapére,* "know"; *sentíre,* "hear," "feel"; *solére,* "be accustomed"; *udíre,* "hear"; *vedere,* "see"; and *volére,* "wish," "to" before a following infinitive is omitted. It is omitted also in exclamations and indirect questions consisting only of an interrogative and an infinitive.

* Cf. **58**, *a.*

Ex.: *Dovrêi capîre*, I ought to understand.
Bisógna pensârci, it is necessary to look out for it.
Potrêmo venire, we shall be able to come.
Non sa che fâre nè dôve avvôlgersi, he doesn't know what to do nor where to turn.

(2) After verbs of accustoming, attaining, beginning, compelling, continuing, hastening, helping, inviting, learning, preparing, teaching, and after verbs of motion, "to" before a following infinitive is *a*.

Ex.: *Andrânno a vedêrla*, they will go to see her.
Si affrettò a rispóndere, he hastened to reply.

(3) After all other verbs it is *di;* but "to" denoting purpose or result is *per*, and "to" indicating duty or necessity is *da*.

Ex.: *Gli dissi di scrîvere*, I told him to write.
Mi è grâto di dîrlo, I am happy to say so.
Lêgge per divertîrsi, he reads to amuse himself.
È trôppo básso per arrivârci, he's too short to reach it.
Ho qualchecôsa da fâre, I have something to do.

c. "By" denoting the agent is *da*.

Ex.: *Fu fátto da lûi*, it was done by him.

d. "In" is *in;* but when expressing future time it is *fra*.

Ex.: *Fra tre giôrni sarà finîto*, in three days it will be finished.

e. "For" is *per:* as *l' ha fátto per me*, "he has done it for me." But in the sense of "since," in speaking of past time, "for" is *da*. "For," meaning "during," is omitted or translated *durânte*. Sentences like "it is right for him to do it" must be translated by *che* with the subjunctive: *è giûsto che lo fáccia*.

Ex.: *Dimôra da mólti ânni a Firênze*, he has lived for many years at Florence (see **73**).
Resterò cinque settimâne, I shall stay for five weeks.
Piôvve durânte un mêse, it rained for a month.
Bisógna ch' io vâda, it is necessary for me to go.

f. "From" is *da;* but before adverbs and sometimes after verbs of departing it is *di.* In speaking of time it is generally *fin da.*

Ex.: *È lontáno di qua*, it is far from here.
Êsco di cdsa, I go out of the house.
Fin dal princípio, from the beginning.

g. Da has, in addition to the meanings "by," "from," "since," another sense hard to render in English: it may be translated "as," "characteristic of," "destined for," "such as to," or "suited to," according to the context. *Da* means also "at the house of" or "to the house of." *Da* corresponds to English "on" or "at" before the word "side," *párte*, used in its literal sense.

Ex.: *Prométto da uómo d' onóre*, I promise as a man of honor.
Il Salvini da Otéllo, Salvini as Othello.
Saréste tánto buóno da venire, would you be so good as to come?
Quésto è da sciócchi, this is acting like a fool.
Il bambíno ha un giudízio da gránde, the child has the judgment of a grown person.
La sála da pránzo, the dining-room.
Úna tázza da caffè, a coffee-cup.
L' ho vedúto dal Signór Néri, I saw him at Mr. Neri's.
Viéne da me, he comes to my house.
Da quésta párte, on this side.

h. A is often used before a noun — not indicating material (which is expressed by *di*) nor purpose (expressed by *da*) — that describes another noun, when in English these two substantives would form a compound word.

Ex.: *Úna mácchina a vapóre*, a steam-engine.
Úna sédia a dóndolo, a rocking-chair.
Úno sgabéllo a tre piédi, a three-legged stool.

i. Êssere per or *stáre per* means "to be about to."

Ex.: *Stáva per parláre*, he was on the point of speaking.

j. In some idiomatic phrases *di* is used in Italian when another preposition would be employed in English.

Ex.: *Di giórno, di nôtte*, by day, by night.
Êssere contênto di úna côsa, to be satisfied with a thing.
Vivo di pâne, I live on bread.
Che facèva dêlle fórbici, what did he do with the scissors?

ADVERBS.

80. (1) Adverbs, unless they begin the clause, are generally placed immediately after the verb; *non*, however, always precedes the verb. When a compound tense is used, the adverb nearly always follows the past participle, but *già, mái, più*, and *sêmpre* usually precede it. See also **84.** *Non* precedes a conjunctive and follows a disjunctive pronoun.

Ex.: *Non ci vádo mái*, I never go there.
Ho parláto spésso, I have often spoken.
Non ha sêmpre parláto così, he hasn't always talked so.
Io non lo védo, I don't see him.

(2) Adverbs are compared like adjectives (see **31**); but "better," "worse," "more," "less" are respectively *mêglio, pêggio, più, méno.*

81. "Yes" is *sì* or *già: sì* when it expresses real affirmation, *già* when it denotes passive assent. "No" is *no.* "Not" is *non*, after which a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i.* "Or not" at the end of a clause is *o no:* as *sía véro o no*, "whether it be true or not."

Ex.: *Le piáce? — Sì.* — "Do you like it?" "Yes."
Che tempáccio! — Già. — "What nasty weather!" "Yes."
Sta bêne, he is well; *non istà bêne*, he isn't well.

a. "What?" meaning "what do you say?" is *cóme?* *Che* and the interjection *o* are often used to introduce questions.

Ex.: *O perchè non rispondête? — Cóme? — Che siête sórdo, signóre?* — "Why don't you answer?" "What?" "Are you deaf, sir?"

b. "Very" is *mólto* (see, however, **35**, *a*). Instead of using a word or suffix for "very," the Italians often repeat the emphasized adjective or adverb.

Ex.: *È mólto bèllo* or *è bellíssimo*, it is very beautiful.
I suôi genitôri êrano pôveri pôveri, his parents were very poor.

82. "Only" may be translated by the adverb *sólo, soltánto*, or *solaménte;* or by the adjective *sólo.* When it modifies anything but a verb, it is often rendered by *non . . . che*, with the whole verb intervening, and with the word modified by "only" immediately after *che.*

Ex.: *Non ne ho compráto che dúe*, I have bought only two of them.

83. "Never" is *non... mái*, with the inflected part of the verb intervening. "Just," as an adverb of time, is *or óra.* "Early" is *prêsto, per têmpo*, or *di buon' óra.* "This morning" is *stamáne;* "last night" is *stanôtte.* "The day after to-morrow" and "the day before yesterday" are respectively *domán l' áltro* and *ier l' áltro.* "A week, a fortnight from to-day" are *ôggi a ôtto, a quíndici.* "Ago" is translated by *fa*, which follows the substantive of time; if this substantive is plural, "ago" may be rendered also by *sóno* (*êrano* or *saránno* if the date from which time is counted be past or future).

Ex.: *Non ti ha mái vedúto*, he has never seen thee.
Son arrivâti or óra, they have just arrived.
Tre ánni fa, three years ago; *quáttro giórni sóno*, four days ago.

Ex.: *Lunedì èrano dúe settimàne*, two weeks ago Monday.
Domàni sarànno cinque mési, five months ago to-morrow.

84. "Here" and "there" when they denote a place already mentioned, and no particular stress is laid upon them, are *ci* and *vi*, which are often used in Italian when they would be superfluous in English; "there is," "there are," etc., are *c' è* or *vi è*, *ci sóno* or *vi sóno*, etc. (sometimes *vi ha*). *Ci*, *vi*, and also *ne*, "thence," occupy the same positions with regard to the verb, and undergo the same changes, as the pronouns *ci*, *vi*, *ne* (**48**, **50**); they precede conjunctive pronouns beginning with *l* or *n*, and follow all others: *ce lo manda*, *ti ci mando*.

When emphasized, "here" is *qui* or *qua*, "there" indicating a place near the person addressed is *costì* or *costà*, and "there" denoting a point remote from both speaker and hearer is *lì* or *là*.

Ex.: *Cárlo vi è tornáto*, Charles has gone back there.
Álla scuóla non ci vádo, I don't go to school.
Vói rimarrète costà, ègli resterà laggiù, ed io non partirò di qui, you will remain where you are, he will stay down there, and I shall not move from here.

a. "Here I am," "here it is," etc., are *èccomi*, *èccolo*, etc.

85. Most adverbs of manner are formed by adding *-ménte* to the feminine singular of the corresponding adjective. Adjectives in *-le* and *-re* drop their final *e* in forming the adverb. See **35**, *a*.

Ex.: *Frànco*, frank; *francaménte*, frankly.
Felice, happy; *feliceménte*, happily.
Piacévole, pleasant; *piacevolménte*, pleasantly.

a. "So" meaning "it" is translated *lo*: as *lo fáccio*, "I do so"; *lo créde*, "he thinks so"; *lo dícono*, "they say so."

EXERCISE 19.

Agostíno è un golóso di príma ríga. Cóme[1] vedéva déi confêtti, úna chícca, délle frútta, súbito se le pigliáva e mangiáva sénza permésso, ánche se non êrano súe. Infíno ì suôi compágni di scuôla lo rimproverávano di quésto viziáccio. La maêstra pensò di punire Agostíno. Un giórno, quándo fu l' óra délla ricreazióne, tirò fuôri dálla súa cassétta de' confêtti, e mettêndoli nel paniêre d' Agostíno, gli dísse[2]: — Quésti li porterái a cása álla túa sorellína. — Agostíno a vedér que' confêtti féce[6] cêrti occhióni grôssi cóme quélli d' un bôve. Non istáva più in sè[3] dálla vôglia di mangiáre que' confêtti. Êra tánto golóso, che se avéva qualcôsa di súo non dáva núlla a nessúno; êra tánto golóso, che avéva la sfacciatággine di mangiáre le côse dégli áltri; o figurátevi dúnque cóme si struggéva di[4] mangiár que' confêtti ch' êrano nel súo panierino. Finíta la refezióne, i bambíni vánno[5] nel giardíno. Appéna Agostíno véde che nélla stánza dov' êrano i panieríni non c' êra nessúno, sparísce dal giardíno, e vía a pigliáre i confêtti. Ma non ha finíto di buttár giù il prímo, che[1] sênte un amáro, un sapóre così cattívo da non potér rêggere; spúta e rispúta, ma l' amáro non se ne andáva.[5] Êra curióso vedér Agostíno disperáto per quel saporáccio. E i compágni chi da un úscio, chi da un áltro, e chi dálla finêstra che dáva sul giardíno, stávano a vedérlo, e a rídere di quésta cêlia che la maêstra avéva fátto[6] a quel golóso. Allóra la maêstra gli dísse[2]: — Védi, Agostíno; ho fátto[6] fáre quésti confêtti piêni d' assênzio appôsta per te; védi a che côsa pôrta l' ingordígia! Un áltro bambíno non ci sarêbbe rimásto a[7] quésta cêlia. — Agostíno si accôrse[8] che la signóra maêstra gli avéva fátta[6] quésta cêlia per súo bêne, e che se non si correggéva diventáva lo zimbêllo di tútti.[9]

[1] When. [2] *Dire.* [3] He was beside himself. [4] He was dying to. [5] *Andare, andársene.* [6] *Fáre.* [7] Wouldn't have been taken in by. [8] *Accôrgersi.* [9] See footnote (‡) on p. 69.

EXERCISE 20.

It is related that in by-gone[1] times a parrot escaped from a villa. This parrot had learned to say all-the-time[2]: "Who's-there[3]? who's-there[3]?" Having-fled[4] into a wood, it was flying from one tree to another without knowing where to go. A peasant, who by chance was hunting[5] in that place, eyed the parrot, and having never seen any[18] birds before[6] of this sort, he was[7] amazed at-it,[8] and took[9] all-possible[10] care to aim straight with his gun, so-as-to shoot-it[11] and carry it to show off as a rare thing. But while the peasant was aiming, the parrot, seeing[4] him, repeated his usual question: "Who's-there[3]? who's-there[3]?" The-peasant's-blood-froze-in-his-veins[12] at those words; and lowering[4] his gun, and taking-his-hat-from-his-head[13] he hastened to reply to him, dreadfully[14] mortified: "Excuse-me,[15] for-mercy's-sake,[16] I took[17] you for a bird!"

[1] *Anddti.* [2] Always. [3] *Chi c' è.* [4] Past participle. [5] *A cdccia.* [6] *Per l' innánzi.* [7] *Rimáse:* see **54**, *f.* [8] *Ne.* [9] Gave himself. [10] *Ógni.* [11] *Tirárgli.* [12] To the peasant not remained blood in-him (*addósso*). [13] *Levátosi di cápo il cappéllo.* [14] *Tútto.* [15] *La scúsi.* [16] For charity. [17] Had taken. [18] Omit.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

86. "**One**," "people," "we," "you," "they," used in an indefinite sense, are rendered in Italian by the reflexive construction with *si* (see **55**).

Ex.: *Si cánta bène in Itália*, they sing well in Italy.
Si fa così, you do this way; *se ne párla*, people speak of it.
Si fánno spésso quéste cóse, one often does these things.

87. "**All**" as a substantive is *tútto* (*tútti*, etc.): as *tacévano tútti*, "all were silent." The adjective "all," "the whole" is *tútto* followed by the definite article: as *tútta la têrra*, "the whole earth"; *tútto il giórno*, "all day"; *tútte le románe son bêlle*, "all Roman ladies are beautiful."

88. "**Any**," when it really adds nothing to the sense, is omitted: as *non ha líbri*, "he hasn't (any) books"; *voléte víno*, "do you want (any) wine?" When, however, this redundant "any" might be replaced by "any of the," it is translated by the partitive genitive (see **12**, *a*): as *voléte del víno*, "do you want any (of the) wine?"

"Any" used substantively in the sense of "any of it," "any of them" is *ne* (see **47**, 3): as *non ne ho*, "I haven't any"; *non ne ha più*, "he hasn't any more"; *ne avéte*, "have you any?"

"Any" used adjectively and meaning "any whatsoever" is *qualúnque:* as *lo fa mêglio di qualúnque áltra persóna*, "he does it better than any other person."

89. "**Some**," when it adds nothing to the sense, is omitted or rendered by the partitive genitive: as *voléte búrro* or *voléte del búrro*, "will you have some butter?"

"Some" meaning "some of it," "some of them" is *ne:* as *ne ha*, "he has some."

Otherwise "some" is *alcúno* or *quálche*. *Quálche* is always singular (even when the meaning is plural), and is never used substantively. Ex.: *alcúne persóne* or *quálche persóna*, "some persons"; *alcúni lo dícono*, "some say so."

90. "Some . . . others," "the one . . . the other," "one . . . another" are translated by *chi . . . chi, áltri . . . áltri, l' úno . . . l' áltro*, or *alcúni . . . alcúni*.

Alcúni used in this way is always plural. A verb whose subject is *chi* or *áltri* (used in this sense) is always singular; *altri* is not used after prepositions. But *l' úno* and *l' áltro* can be used in any case or number.

Ex.: *Tútti, chi più tôsto, e chi méno, morívano*, all died, some sooner, some later.
Áltri cdde, áltri fúgge, some fall, others flee.
Gli úni son buôni, gli áltri cattívi, some are good, others bad.

91. Following is a list of some other indefinite pronouns and adjectives:—

Anybody, *qualcúno, qualchedúno, chicchessía*, pronouns.
Any more, *più, ne . . . più*, pron.
Anything, *qualchecôsa*, pron.
Anything else, *áltro*, pron.
Both, *tútti e dúe, l' úno e l' áltro, ambedúe*, pron. or adj.
Certain, *cêrto*, adj.
Each, *ógni, ciascúno, ognúno*, adj.
Either, *l' úno o l' áltro*, pron. or adj.
Every, *ógni, ciascúno, ognúno, ciascheduno*, adj.
Everybody, *tútti* (pl.), *ciaschedúno, ciascúno, ognúno*, pron.
Everything, *tútto*, pron.
Few, a few, *pôchi* (pl.), pron. or adj.
However much, (or many), *per quanto* (*-ti*), adj.
Little, *pôco*, pron. or adj.
Less, *méno*, pron. or adj.*
Many, *mólti*, pron. or adj.†
More, *più*, pron. or adj.
Much, *mólto*, pron. or adj.
Neither, *non . . . l' úno nè l' áltro, nè l' úno nè l' áltro*, pron. or adj.
No, *non . . . nessúno, non . . . alcúno*, adj.
Nobody, *non . . . nessúno*, pron.
No more, *non ne . . . più*, pron., *non . . . più*, adj.
None, *non ne . . .*, pron.
Nothing, *non . . . niênte, non . . . núlla*, pron.
Nothing else, *non . . . più niênte, non . . . più núlla*, pron.
Others, *altrúi* (see **91**, *d*), pron.
Several, *parécchi* (fem. *parécchie*), pron. or adj.
Somebody, *qualchedúno, qualcúno*, pron.
Something, *qualchecôsa*, pron.
Such, *tále*, adj.
Such a, *un tále*, adj. (but also pron. in Ital., meaning "so-and-so").
Whatever, *qualúnque* (invariable), adj.

* "Less" = "smaller" is *più piccolo*. † "A great many" is *moltissimi*.

a. The verb used with *nessúno, alcúno, niênte, núlla* (meaning "no," "nobody," "nothing") must be preceded by *non*, "not," unless this pronoun or adjective precedes the verb.

Ex.: *Non ho vísto nessúno*, I have seen nobody.
Nessún pôpolo lo possiêde, no people possesses it.

b. "Nothing" followed by an adjective is *niênte di.*

Ex.: *Non avéte niênte di buôno*, you have nothing good.

c. Ciascúno, ciaschedúno, ognúno, nessúno, and *alcúno* when used adjectively are inflected like *úno* (see **14, 15**).

d. Altrúi, "another," "others," "our neighbor," is invariable, and is not used as subject of a verb: as *con altrúi*, "with other people"; *chi áma altrúi áma sè stésso*, "he who loves his neighbor loves himself." The prepositions *di* and *a* are sometimes omitted before it: as *la móstro altrúi*, "I point her out to others"; *la vôglia altrúi*, "the will of another."

EXERCISE 21.

Per mutáre[1]! Riccárdo díce[2] mále di qualchedúno. Che brútto vízio è mái quéllo! A sentír Riccárdo, tútti son ásini, tútti sóno cattívi; di buôni e di brávi non c' è che lúi. Ma oramái ognúno ha conosciúto di che pánni vêste,[3] e nessúno gli créde più. Se fósse brávo e buôno, si guarderêbbe dal dir mále di quésto e di quéllo, ánche quándo ne avésse quálche ragióne. Figurátevi, dúnque, se può[4] êssere buôno e brávo lúi che díce mále di tútti! Sôrte, ripêto, che nessúno gli créde più, e quándo si sênte dir mále di qualchedúno, e si sa[5] che c' è Riccárdo di mêzzo,[6] ognúno si affrétta a rispóndere: Se l' ha détto[2] quel maldicênte di Riccárdo, non è véro núlla dicêrto.

[1] There he is at it again! [2] *Dire.* [3] What sort of a fellow he is. [4] *Potére.* [5] *Sapére.* [6] At the bottom of it.

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

Arranged according to Conjugation.*

92. This list contains no compound verbs except those which differ in conjugation from their simple verbs and those for which no simple verb exists in Italian. With every verb its irregular forms are given: in the same line with the infinitive are the present participle (if it be needed to show the original form of the infinitive), the first person singular of the preterite indicative, the past participle, and the first person singular of the future indicative (if the future be contracted); immediately below are the present indicative, the imperative, and the present subjunctive, if these parts be peculiar. For *dáre* and *stáre* the whole preterite and the first person singular of the imperfect subjunctive are given also. *Êssere* is irregular throughout. *All tenses not mentioned are regular.* For peculiar *endings*, see **63**, **68**. Note the following rules: —

a. If the *present participle* is given, the following forms, unless expressly mentioned, are to be constructed from its stem: all *preterite forms with accented endings*, and the whole *imperfect indicative* and *subjunctive*. E. g. *fáre*, pres. part. *facêndo*: hence pret. 2d sing. and 1st and 2d pl., *facésti*, *facémmo*, *facéste*; imp. ind., *facéva*, etc.; imp. subj., *facéssi*, etc.

If the present participle is not given, these forms, unless they be mentioned, are to be constructed from the stem of the infinitive. E. g. *venire*: pret. *venísti*, *venímmo*, *veníste*; imp. ind. *veníva*; imp. subj. *venissi*.

b. Preterites in *-ái*, *-éi*, *-íi*, and *-êtti* (except *dêtti* and *stêtti*) are

* Reference to these tables is facilitated by an Alphabetical List of Irregular and Defective Verbs (see page 101). Students are advised not to learn forms in parentheses nor any verbs or forms marked *rare* or *poetical*.

regular throughout. In all *other* preterites the third person singular can be formed from the first person by changing final *i* to *e*, and the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular. E. g. *fáre*, pret. *féci*: 3d sing. *féce*, 3d pl. *fécero*.

c. If the future is not given, it is to be constructed from the infinitive. The conditional always has the same stem as the future. See **65**, p. 60.

d. The imperative, when not given, is like the corresponding forms of the present indicative. See **66**, *b*, top of p. 62.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

1. Andáre, *go*, andái, andáto; andrò (anderò).

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Vádo *or* vô,	andiámo,	Va',	Váda,	andiámo,
vái,	andáte,	andiámo,	váda,	andiáte,
va,	vánno.	andáte.	váda,	vádano.

2. Fáre, *do*, facêndo, féci,* fátto; farò. Fáre (*formerly also* fácere) *was originally a verb of the third conjugation:* see **92**, *a*.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Fáccio *or* fô,	facciámo,	Fa',	Fáccia,	facciámo,
fái,†	fáte,	facciámo,	fáccia,	facciáte,
fa,†	fánno.	fáte.	fáccia,	fácciano.

3. Dáre, *give*, diêdi *or* dêtti, dáto; darò. *Imp. subj.* déssi.

PRES. IND.	PRET. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Dô,	Diêdi *or* dêtti,		Día,
dái,	désti,	Da',	día,
dà,	diêde *or* dêtte,‡		día,
diámo,	démmo,	diámo,	diámo,
dáte,	déste,	dáte.	diáte,
dánno.	diêdero *or* dêttero.‡		díano *or* díeno.

* In poetry we sometimes find a preterite *fêi*, *fésti*, *fé* or *fêo*, *fémmo*, *féste*, *férono* or *fénno*; and an imp. ind. *féa*, etc.

† Also *fáci*, *fáce*.

‡ Also *diè*, sing.; *diêr* or *diêro* or *diêrono*, pl.

4. Stáre (**67**, *a*), *stand*, stêtti, státo; starò. *Imp. subj.* stéssi.

PRES. IND.	PRET. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Stô,	Stêtti,		Stía,
stái,	stésti,	Sta',	stía,
sta,	stêtte,		stía,
stiámo,	stémmo,	stiámo,	stiámo,
státe,	stéste,	státe.	stiáte,
stánno.	stêttero.		stíano *or* stíeno.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

5. Avére, *have*, êbbi, avúto; avrò. *See* **53**, *b*.*

6. Sapére, *know*, sêppi, sapúto; saprò.

PRES. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Sô, sappiámo,	Sáppi,	Sáppia, sappiámo,
sái, sapéte,	sappiámo,	sáppia, sappiáte,
sa, sánno.	sappiáte.	sáppia, sáppiano.

7. Cadére, *fall*, cáddi, cadúto; cadrò.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Cádo (cággio), cadiámo (caggiámo),	Cáda (cággia), cadiámo (caggiámo),
cádi, cadéte,	cáda (cággia), cadiáte (caggiáte),
cáde, cádono (cággiono).	cáda (cággia), cádano (cággiano).

8. Dovére, *owe*, dovéi (dovêtti), dovúto; dovrò. *Imperative lacking.*

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Dêvo (dêbbo *or* dêggio),	Dêbba (dêva *or* dêggia),
dêvi (dêbbi),	dêbba (dêva *or* dêggia),
dêve (dêbbe),	dêbba (dêva *or* dêggia),
dobbiámo (deggiámo),	dobbiámo,
dovéte,	dobbiáte,
dêvono (dêbbono *or* dêggiono).†	dêbbano (dêvano *or* dêggiano).

* In poetry we find: *dggio*, *dbbo*, or *dio* for *ho*; *dve* for *ha*; *dggia* or *dia* for *dbbia*; *êi* for *êbbi*; a future *arò*, etc., or *averò*, etc., and similar forms in the conditional.

† Also *dëo*, *dëi*, *dëe*, *dovémo*, *dovéte*, *dëono* or *dënno*.

9. Sedére, *sit*, sedéi *or* sedêtti, sedúto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Siêdo *or* sêggo,	sediámo (seggiámo),	Siêda *or* sêgga,	sediámo (seggiámo),
siêdi,	sedéte,	siêda *or* sêgga,	sediáte,
siêde,	siêdono *or* sêggono.	siêda *or* sêgga,	siêdano *or* sêggano.

10. Vedére, *see*, vídi, vedúto *or* vísto; vedrò. Provvedére *has a future* provvederò; prevedére *has* prevederò *or* prevedrò. *All other compounds are like* vedére.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Védo (véggo *or* véggio),	Véda (végga *or* véggia),
védi,	véda (végga *or* véggia),
véde,	véda (végga *or* véggia),
vediámo (veggiámo),	vediámo (veggiámo),
vedéte,	vediáte (veggiáte),
védono (véggono *or* véggiono).	védano (véggano *or* véggiano).

11. Giacére, *lie*, giácqui, giaciúto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Giáccio,	giacciámo,	Giáccia,	giacciámo,
giáci,	giacéte,	giáccia,	giacciáte,
giáce,	giácciono.	giáccia,	giácciano.

12. Piacére, *please: like* giacére (11).

13. Tacére, *be silent: like* giacére (11).

14. Solére, *be wont*, sôlito. *No pret., fut., cond., nor imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Sôglio,	sogliámo,	Sôglia,	sogliámo,
suôli,	soléte,	sôglia,	sogliáte,
suôle,	sôgliono.	sôglia,	sôgliano.

15. Dolére, *grieve*, dôlsi, dolúto; dorrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Dôlgo (dôglio),	dogliámo,*	Dôlga (dôglia),	dogliámo,*
duôli,	doléte,	dôlga (dôglia),	dogliáte,
duôle,	dôlgono (dôgliono).	dôlga (dôglia),	dôlgano (dôgliano).

* Also *dolghiámo*: a popular form.

16. Rimanére, *remain*, rimási, rimásto *or* rimáso; rimarrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Rimángo,	rimaniámo,*	Rimánga,	rimaniámo,*
rimáni,	rimanéte,	rimánga,	rimaniáte,
rimáne,	rimángono.	rimánga,	rimángano.

17. Tenére, *hold*, ténni, tenúto; terrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Têngo,	teniámo,*	Tênga,	teniámo,*
tiêni,	tenéte,	tênga,	teniáte,
tiêne,	têngono.	tênga,	têngano.

18. Valére, *be worth*, válsi, valúto *or* válso; varrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Válgo (váglio),	vagliámo,*	Válga (váglia),	vagliámo,*
váli,	valéte,	válga (váglia),	vagliáte,
vále,	válgono (vágliono).	válga (váglia),	válgano (vágliano).

19. Volére, *wish*, vôlli,† volúto; vorrò.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Vôglio,	vogliámo,	Vôgli,	Vôglia,	vogliámo,
vuôi,‡	voléte,	vogliámo,	vôglia,	vogliáte,
vuôle,	vôgliono.	vogliáte.	vôglia,	vôgliano.

20. Parére, *seem*, párvi, parúto *or* párso; parrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Páio,	paiámo *or* pariámo,	Páia,	paiámo *or* pariámo,
pári,	paréte,	páia,	paiáte,
páre,	páiono.	páia,	páiano.

21. Potére, *be able*, potéi, potúto; potrò.§ *No imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Pôsso,	possiámo,	Pôssa,	possiámo,
puôi,	potéte,	pôssa,	possiáte,
può,‖	pôssono.‖	pôssa,	pôssano.

* Also *rimanghiámo; tenghiámo; valghiámo:* popular forms.

† Also *vôlsi.* ‡ Also *vuôgli* or *vuôli.*

§ In poetry we find a conditional *poría.* ‖ Also *puôle; pônno.*

22. Persuadére, *persuade*, persuási, persuáso. *Pres.* persuádo, etc.
23. Calére, *matter*, cálse, calúto. *Impersonal. No fut., cond., nor imperative. Not modern.*

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Cále.	Cáglia.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

e. All irregular verbs of the third conjugation are accented, in the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive, on the same syllable as in the infinitive.

f. Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert no *i* between the *c* or *g* and the *o* or *a* of the present indicative and subjunctive endings, except in the first person plural of both moods and the second person plural of the subjunctive. Cf. **60**, last paragraph.

g. See chapter on Pronunciation, **4**, **8**, *d.*

PRESENT REGULAR.

24. Accêndere, *light*, accési, accéso.
25. Affliggere, *afflict*, afflíssi, afflítto.
26. Álgere, *be cold*, álsi. *Defective. Rare.*
27. Allúdere, *allude*, allúsi (alludéi), allúso.
28. Árdere, *burn*, ársi, árso.
29. Arrôgere, *add*, arrôsi, arrôso *or* arrôto. *Defective. Rare.*
30. Assídere, *besiege*, assísi, assíso. *Rare.*
31. Assôlvere, *absolve*, assolvêtti *or* assolvéi *or* assôlsi, assôlto *or* assolúto. *So* risôlvere (*determine*); *for* sôlvere, dissôlvere, *and* risôlvere (*dissolve*), *see* 107.
32. Assôrbere, *absorb*, assôrsi (*not in use*), assôrto. *Rare.*
33. Avêllere, *uproot*, avúlse, avúlso. *Defective. Rare.*
34. Chiúdere, *shut*, chiúsi, chiúso. *So all verbs in* -chiúdere *or* -clúdere. See, however, **4**, **8**, *d.*
35. Côlere, *revere*, cólto *or* cúlto. *Defective. Rare.*
36. Connêttere, *connect*, connêssi (connettéi), connêsso (connettúto). *Rare.*
37. Conóscere, *know*, conóbbi, conosciúto.
38. Conquídere, *conquer*, conquísi, conquíso. *Rare.*

39. Consúmere, *consume*, consúnsi, consúnto. *Rare.* Presúmere *has also* presuméi.
40. Contúndere, *bruise*, contúsi, contúso.
41. Córrere, *run*, córsi, córso.
42. Créscere, *grow*, crébbi, cresciúto.
43. Cuôcere, *cook*, cocêndo, côssi, côtto. *Pres.* cuôcio *or* cuôco, *etc.**
44. Decídere, *decide*, decísi, decíso.
45. Difêndere, *defend*, difési (difendéi), diféso.
46. Dirígere, *direct*, dirêssi, dirêtto.
47. Discútere, *discuss*, discússi (discutéi), discússo.
48. Distínguere, *distinguish*, distínsi, distínto.
49. Divídere, *divide*, divísi, díviso.
50. Elídere, *elide*, elísi (elidéi), elíso.
51. Elúdere, *elude*, elúsi (eludéi *or* eludêtti), elúso.
52. Êrgere, *erect*, êrsi, êrto. *Rare.*
53. Esígere, *exact*, esigéi (esigêtti), esátto.
54. Esístere, *exist*, esistéi (esistêtti), esistíto.
55. Espêllere, *expel*, espúlsi, espúlso. *Rare.*
56. Esplôdere, *explode*, esplôsi, esplôso.
57. Esprímere, *express*, esprêssi, esprêsso. *So all other verbs in* -prímere. Prêmere *and its compounds are regular.*
58. Fêndere, *split*, fendéi (fendêtti *or* fêssi), fendúto *or* fêsso.
59. Fíggere (fígere), *fix*, físsi, fítto.
60. Fíngere, *feign*, fínsi, fínto.
61. Fóndere, *melt*, fúsi (fondéi), fúso (fondúto).
62. Frángere, *break*, fránsi, fránto.
63. Fríggere, *fry*, fríssi, fritto.
64. Genuflêttere, *kneel*, genuflêssi, genuflêsso. *Rare.*
65. Intrídere, *dilute*, intrísi, intríso.
66. Intrúdere, *intrude*, intrúsi, intrúso.
67. Invádere, *invade*, invási, inváso.
68. Lêdere, *offend*, lêsi (*not in use*), lêso. *Rare.*
69. Lêggere, *read*, lêssi, lêtto.
70. Lícere *or* lécere, *be lawful*, lécito *or* lícito. *Impersonal. Defective. Poetical.*
71. Lúdere, *play*, lúsi, lúso. *Rare.*
72. Mêrgere, *plunge*, mêrsi, mêrso. *Rare.*
73. Méttere, *put*, méssi *or* mísi, mésso.

* In the 1st and 2d persons plural of the pres. ind., subj., and imperative, *uo* is generally replaced by *o*: *cociámo*, etc.

74. Môlcere, *soothe*, múlse. *Defective. Rare.*
75. Môrdere, *bite*, môrsi, môrso.
76. Muôvere, *move*, movêndo, môssi, môsso.
77. Náscere, *be born*, nácqui, náto.
78. Nascóndere, *hide*, nascósi, nascósto.
79. Neglígere (*see* 5, Gli), *neglect*, neglêssi, neglêtto.
80. Offêndere, *offend*, offési, offéso.
81. Ostêndere, *show. Defective. Rare.*
82. Percípere, *perceive*, percêtto. *Defective. Rare.*
83. Pêrdere, *lose*, perdéi *or* perdêtti *or* pêrsi, perdúto *or* pêrso.
84. Piôvere, *rain*, piôvve (piovè), piovúto. *Impersonal.*
85. Pôrgere, *present*, pôrsi, pôrto.
86. Predilígere, *prefer*, predilêssi, predilêtto.
87. Prêndere, *take*, prési, préso.
88. Protêggere, *protect*, protêssi, protêtto.
89. Rádere, *shave*, rási (radéi), ráso.
90. Redímere, *redeem*, redênsi (rediméi), redênto.
91. Rêggere, *support*, rêssi, rêtto.
92. Rêndere, *render*, résí (rendéi *or* rendêtti), réso (rendúto).
93. Rídere, *laugh*, rísi, ríso.
94. Riflêttere, *reflect*, riflettéi *or* riflêssi, riflettúto *or* riflêsso. Riflêttere, "*to reflect light*," *is generally irregular*; riflêttere, "*to meditate*," *is usually regular*.
95. Rifúlgere, *shine*, rifúlsi. *Past part. lacking. Poetical.*
96. Rilúcere, *shine*, rilússi *or* rilucéi. *Past part. lacking.*
97. Rispóndere, *answer*, rispósi, rispósto.
98. Ródere, *gnaw*, rósi, róso.
99. Rómpere, *break*, rúppi, rótto.
100. Scéndere, *descend*, scési, scéso.
101. Scíndere, *sever*, scindéi *or* scíssi, scísso.
102. Sciôlvere, *breakfast*, sciôlsi *or* sciolvêtti, sciôlto. *Rare.*
103. Scôrgere, *perceive*, scôrsi, scôrto.
104. Scrívere, *write*, scríssi, scrítto.
105. Scuôtere, *shake*, scotêndo, scôssi, scôsso.*
106. Soffólcere, *support*, soffólse, soffólto. *Defective. Rare.*
107. Sôlvere, *undo*, solvéi (solvêtti), solúto. *Poetical. So* dissôlvere; *for* assôlvere *and* risôlvere (*determine*), *see* 31.
108. Sórgere, *rise*, sórsi, sórto.

* See page 94, footnote.

109. Sospêndere, *suspend*, sospési, sospéso. *So* appêndere, impêndere; pêndere *is reg.*, dipêndere *either reg. or irreg.*
110. Spándere, *spill*, spandéi *or* spandêtti, spánto.
111. Spárgere, *scatter*, spársi, spárso *or* spárto.
112. Spêndere, *spend*, spési, spéso.
113. Spêrgere, *disperse*, spêrsi, spêrso. *Rare.*
114. Spôrgere, *project*, spôrsi, spôrto.
115. Strúggere, *melt*, strússi, strútto.
116. Succêdere, *happen*, succêssi *or* succedéi, succêsso *or* succedúto. *So* concêdere, *which has also* concedêtti; cêdere *and its other compounds are generally regular.*
117. Súggere, *suck*, suggéi *or* sússi. *Past part. lacking. Rare.*
118. Têndere (*transitive*), *extend*, tési, téso. *The intrans. verb is reg., but has no past participle.*
119. Têrgere, *wipe*, têrsi *or* tergéi, têrso. *Rare.*
120. Tôrcere, *twist*, tôrsi, tôrto.
121. Uccídere, *kill*, uccísi, uccíso.
122. Víncere, *conquer*, vínsi, vínto.
123. Vívere, *live*, víssi, vissúto *or* vivúto; viverò *or* vivrò.
124. Vôlgere, *turn*, vôlsi, vôlto.
125. Vôlvere, *turn*, vôlsi, vôlto. *Rare.* Devôlvere *has a past part.* devolúto.

PRESENT IRREGULAR.

126. Êssere, *be*, fúi, státo; sarò. *See* **53**, *a.**
127. Bére *or* bévere, *drink*, bevêndo, bévvi (bevêtti *or* bevéi), bevúto (beúto); berò *or* beverò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Bévo *or* béo,	beviámo *or* beiámo,	Béva *or* béa,	beviámo *or* beiámo,
bévi *or* béi,	bevéte *or* beéte,	béva *or* béa,	beviáte *or* beiáte,
béve *or* bée,	bévono *or* béono.	béva *or* béa,	bévano *or* béano.

* In the imperfect indicative *êramo* is often used for *eravámo*. We find in poetry: *sête* for *siête; ênno* or *en* for *sóno* (third plur.); *sie* for *sía; erámo, erâte* for *eravámo, eravâte; u* for *o* in the preterite and imperfect subjunctive; *fôro* for *fúrono; fia, fiano* or *fieno*, for *sarà, saránno; fôra, fôrano* for *sarêi, sarêbbe, sarêbbero; sêndo* for *essêndo; súto, essúto*, or *issúto* for *státo*.

128. Chiêdere, *ask*, chiêsi (chiési *or* chiedéi), chiêsto.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Chiêdo (chiêggo),*	Chiêda (chiêgga),*
chiêdi,	chiêda (chiêgga),
chiêde,	chiêda (chiêgga),
chiediámo,	chiediámo,
chiedéte,	chiediáte,
chiêdono (chiêggono).*	chiêdano (chiêggano).*

129. Condúrre, *conduct*, conducêndo, condússi, condótto; condurrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Condúco,	conduciámo,	Condúca,	conduciámo,
condúci,	conducéte,	condúca,	conduciáte,
condúce,	condúcono.	condúca,	condúcano.

130. Nuôcere, *harm*, nocêndo, nôcqui, nociúto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Nuôco *or* nôccio,	nociámo,	Nuôca *or* nôccia,	nociámo,
nuôci,	nocéte,	nuôca *or* nôccia,	nociáte,
nuôce,	nuôcono *or* nôcciono.	nuôca *or* nôccia,	nuôcano *or* nôcciano.

131. Pórre, *put*, ponêndo, pósi, pósto; porrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Póngo,	poniámo (ponghiámo),	Pónga,	poniámo (ponghiámo),
póni,	ponéte,	pónga,	poniáte,
póne,	póngono.	pónga,	póngano.

132. Trárre (tráere), *drag*, traêndo, trássi, trátto; trarrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Trággo,	traiámo *or* traggiámo,†	Trágga,	traiámo *or* traggiámo,†
trái (trággi),	traéte,	trágga,	traiáte,
tráe (trágge),	trággono.	trágga,	trággano.

133. Vêllere (vêrre), *tear up*, vêlsi, vêlto; vellerò (verrò *or* velgerò).
Vêllere, *which is rare, has not all the forms given here; but its compound*, svêllere, *has them all.*

---

* Also *chiêggio, chiêggiono, chiêggia, chiêggiano.* † Also *tragghiámo.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Vêllo *or* vêlgo,	velliámo (velgiámo),	Vêlla *or* vêlga,	velliámo (velgiámo),
vêlli (vêlgi),	velléte,	vêlla *or* vêlga,	velliáte (velgiáte),
vêlle (vêlge),	vêllono *or* vêlgono.	vêlla *or* vêlga,	vêllano *or* vêlgano.

134. Cógliere (córre), *gather*, cólsi, cólto; coglierò *or* corrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Cólgo (cóglio),	cogliámo (colghiámo),	Cólga (cóglia),	cogliámo (colghiámo),
cógli,	cogliéte,	cólga (cóglia),	cogliáte,
cóglie,	cólgono (cógliono).	cólga (cóglia),	cólgano (cógliano).

135. Scégliere (scérre), *choose: like* cógliere (134).
136. Sciógliere (sciórre), *untie: like* cógliere (134).
137. Tógliere (tórre), *take: like* cógliere (134).
138. Giúngere (giúgnere), *to arrive*, giúnsi, giúnto; giungerò (giugnerò).

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Giúngo (giúgno),	Giúnga (giúgna),
giúngi (giúgni),	giúnga (giúgna),
giúnge (giúgne),	giúnga (giúgna),
giungiámo (giugniámo),	giungiámo (giugniámo),
giungéte (giugnéte),	giungiáte (giugniáte),
giúngono (giúgnono).	giúngano (giúgnano).

139. Cíngere (cígnere), *gird: like* giúngere (138).
140. Múgnere (múngere), *milk: like* giúngere (138).
141. Piángere (piágnere), *weep: like* giúngere (138).
142. Píngere (pígnere), *paint: like* giúngere (138).
143. Púngere (púgnere), *prick: like* giúngere (138).
144. Spêgnere (spêngere), *extinguish: like* giúngere (138), *except that the forms with* gn *are as common as those with* ng.
145. Spíngere (spígnere), *push: like* giúngere (138).
146. Stríngere (strígnere), *bind: like* giúngere (138), *except that the p.p. is* strétto *or* strínto. Costríngere *has only* costrétto.
147. Tíngere (tígnere), *dye: like* giúngere (138).
148. Úngere (úgnere), *anoint: like* giúngere (138).

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

PRESENT REGULAR.

149. Aprire, *open*, aprii *or* apêrsi, apêrto. *Pres.* ápro, *etc.*

150. Coprire (cuoprire), *cover*, coprii *or* copêrsi, copêrto. *Pres.* cò̀pro (cuò̀pro), *etc.*

151. Offrire (offerire), *offer*, offrii (offerii) *or* offêrsi, offêrto. *Pres.* ò̀ffro (offerisco), *etc.*

152. Soffrire, *suffer: like* offrire (151).

153. Convertire, *convert*, convertii *or* convêrsi, convertito *or* convêrso. *Pres.* convêrto *or* convertisco, *etc.* *All other verbs in* -vertire *are reg.*

154. Costruire (costruire), *construct*, co(n)strússi *or* co(n)struíi, co(n)struíto *or* co(n)strútto. *Pres.* co(n)struisco, *etc.*

155. Digerire, *digest*, digerii, digerito (digêsto). *Pres.* digerisco, *etc.*

156. Esaurire, *exhaust*, esaurii, esaurito *or* esáusto. *Pres.* esaurisco, *etc.*

157. Seppellire *or* sepellire, *bury*, sep(p)ellii, seppellito *or* sepólto. *Pres.* sep(p)ellisco, *etc.*

PRESENT IRREGULAR.

158. Cucire, *sew*, cucii, cucito. *Pres.* cúcio *or* cucisco. *This verb inserts* i *before* o *and* a, *but not before* e *and* i.

159. Sdrucire *or* sdruscire, *rip: like* cucire (158).

160. Empire *or* émpiere, *fill*, empiêndo, empii, empito. *All but the present from the stem of* empire. *So* compire *or* cómpiere, *which has also a past part.* compiúto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Émpio (empisco),	empiámo,	Émpia,	empiámo,
émpi (empisci),	empíte,	émpia,	empiáte,
émpie (empisce),	émpiono (empiscono).	émpia,	émpiano.

161. Morire, *die*, morii, mò̀rto; morrò *or* morirò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Muò̀io (muò̀ro),	moriámo *or* muoiámo,	Muò̀ia (muò̀ra),	moriámo *or* muoiámo,
muò̀ri *or* muò̀i,	moríte,	muò̀ia (muò̀ra),	muoiáte,
muò̀re,	muò̀iono (muò̀rono).	muò̀ia (muò̀ra),	muò̀iano (muò̀rano).*

* In all forms where *uo* occurs, it may be replaced by *o*.

162. Seguíre, *follow*, seguíi, seguíto. *Pres.* séguo, *etc.* *The verb is generally regular; but the* é *may be changed to* iê *in all forms where it is accented.* Proseguíre *has* -séguo *or* -seguísco.

163. Sparíre, *disappear*, sparíi *or* spárvi, sparíto. *Pres.* (*regular*) sparísco, *etc.* Apparíre *has* appárvi *or* -si *or* -íi, apparíto *or* appárso; comparíre *has* compárvi *or* -si *or* -íi, compárso; *otherwise they are like* sparíre, *but they have in the present the additional forms:* -páio, -páre, -páiono; -páia, -páiano.

164. Díre, *say*, dicêndo, díssi, détto; dirò. Díre (*formerly* dícere) *belongs really to the third conjugation:* dicésti, -éva, -éssi.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Díco,	diciámo,	Di',	Díca,	diciámo,
díci,	díte,	diciámo,	díca,	diciáte,
díce,	dícono.	díte.	díca,	dícano.

165. Salíre, *ascend*, salíi *or* sálsi, salíto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Sálgo (salísco),	saliámo *or* sagliámo,*	Sálga (salísca),	saliámo *or* sagliámo,*
sáli (salísci),	salíte,	sálga (salísca),	sagliáte,
sále (salísce),	sálgono (salíscono).	sálga (salísca),	sálgano (salíscano).

166. Venire, *come*, vénni, venúto; verrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Vêngo (vêgno),	veniámo,*	Vênga (vêgna),	veniámo,*
viêni,	veníte,	vênga (vêgna),	veniáte,
viêne,	vêngono (vêgnono).	vênga (vêgna),	vêngano (vêgnano).

167. Udíre, *hear*, udíi, udíto; udirò (udrò).

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Ôdo,	udiámo,	Ôda,	udiámo,
ôdi,	udíte,	ôda,	udiáte,
ôde,	ôdono.	ôda,	ôdano.

168. Uscíre (escíre), *go out*, uscíi, uscíto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Êsco,	usciámo,	Êsca,	usciámo,
êsci,	uscíte,	êsca,	usciáte,
êsce,	êscono.	êsca,	êscano.

169. Oríre, *be born*, ôrto. *Defective. Rare.*

---

* Also *salghiámo; venghiámo* · popular forms.

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

93. Every irregular verb in this list is followed by a number referring to the table of Irregular Verbs arranged according to Conjugation. Obsolete defective verbs that present no irregularity have not been mentioned.

a. Compound verbs have, in general, been excluded from this list, unless they differ in conjugation from the simple verbs from which they come (see **67**, *a*). The commonest prefixes are: *a-* (corresponding in meaning to the preposition *a*); *as-* (= Latin *abs-*); *co-*, *com-*, *con-*, *cor-* (= prep. *con*); *contra-* (= prep. *cóntra*); *de-*, *di-* (= Lat. *de-*); *dis-* (= Lat. *dis-*); *e-*, *es-* (= Lat. *ex*); *i-*, *im-*, *in-*, *ir-* (= prep. *in*); *o-* (= Lat. *ob*); *per-* (= prep. *per*); *pre-* (= Lat. *prae-*); *pro-* (= Lat. *pro-*); *r-*, *re-*, *ri-* (= Lat. *re-*); *s-* (= Lat. *ex-* or *dis-*); *so-*, *sos-*, *su-* (= Lat. *sub*); *sopra-*, *sopr-*, *sor-* (= prep. *sópra*); *sott-*, *sotto-* (= prep. *sótto*); *stra-* (= Lat. *extra*); *tra-* (= prep. *tra*). After several of these prefixes the initial consonant of the simple verb is generally found doubled: *a* + *cadére* = *accadére*. *S-* is sometimes combined with *con-*, *r-* with *a-* or *in-*: *scoscéndere*, *raccógliere*, *rincórrere*.

Accadére, *see* cadére, 7.
Accéndere, 24.
Acclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.
Accórgere, *see* scórgere, 103.
Acquisíre *has only* acquisíto.
Addúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
Affliggere, 25.
Álgere, 26.
Allúdere, 27.
Ancídere, *see* uccídere, 121.
Andáre, 1.
Annéttere, *see* connéttere, 36.
Antepórre, *see* pórre, 131.
Antivedére, *p.p. only* antivedúto, *otherwise like* vedére, 10.
Apparíre, *see* sparíre, 163.
Appartenére, *see* tenére, 17.
Appéndere, *see* sospéndere, 109.
Aprire, 149.
Árdere, 28.

Arrôgere, 29.
Ascéndere, *see* scéndere, 100.
Asciôlvere, *see* sciôlvere, 102.
Ascóndere, *see* nascóndere, 78.
Aspêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
Assalíre, *see* salíre, 165.
Assídere, 30.
Assístere, *see* esístere, 54.
Assôlvere, 31.
Assôrbere, 32.
Assúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.
Avêllere, 33.
Avére, 5.
Bére, 127.
Bévere, *see* bére, 127.
Cadére, 7.
Calére, 23.
Cêdere, *generally reg., sometimes has pret.* cêssi, *p.p.* cêsso.
Chiêdere, 128.
Chiúdere, 34.
Cígnere, *see* cíngere, 139.
Cíngere, 139.
Circoncídere, *see* decídere, 44.
Côgliere, 134.
Coincídere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
Côlere, 35.
Collúdere, *see* lúdere, 71.
Comparíre, *see* sparíre, 163.
Compêtere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
Cómpiere, *see* empíre, 160.
Compíre, *see* empíre, 160.
Comprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
Concêdere, *see* succêdere, 116.
Conclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.
Concútere, *see* discútere, 47.
Condúrre, 129.
Connêttere, 36.
Conóscere, 37.
Conquídere, 38.
Consístere, *see* esístere, 54.
Constáre *is reg.*
Construíre, *see* costruíre, 154.
Consúmere, 39.
Contêndere, *see* têndere, 118.
Contrastáre *is reg.*
Controvêrtere, *see* Vêrtere.
Contúndere, 40.
Convêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
Convertíre, 153.
Copríre, 150.
Côrre, *see* côgliere, 134.
Córrere, 41.
Corrispóndere, *see* rispóndere, 97
Cospárgere, *see* spárgere, 111.
Cospêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
Costruíre, 154.
Créscere, 42.
Cucíre, 158.
Cuôcere, 43.
Cuopríre, *see* copríre, 150.
Dáre, 3.
Decídere, 44.
Dedúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
Delínquere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and its pret.*, delinquêtti, *is rare.*
Deprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
Desístere, *see* esístere, 54.
Devôlvere, *see* vôlvere, 125.
Difêndere, 45.
Digerír e, 155.
Dipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.
Díre, 164.
Dirígere, 46.
Dirímere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
Discéndere, *see* scéndere, 100.
Discútere, 47.
Dispêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.
Dissôlvere, *see* sôlvere, 107.
Dissuadére, *see* persuadére, 22.

Distáre, *reg. in pres. of all moods, no pres. p., otherwise like* stáre, 4.
Distínguere, 48.
Distrúggere, *see* strúggere, 115.
Divedére, *has nothing but infin.*
Divêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
Divídere, 49.
Dolére, 15.
Dovére, 8.
Elêggere, *see* lêggere, 69.
Elídere, 50.
Elúdere, 51.
Émpiere, *see* empíre, 160.
Empíre, 160.
Êrgere, 52.
Erígere, *see* dirígere, 46.
Esaurire, 156.
Escíre, *see* uscíre, 168.
Esclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.
Esígere, 53.
Esímere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
Esístere, 54.
Espêllere, 55.
Esplôdere, 56.
Esprímere, 57.
Êssere, 126.
Estínguere, *see* distínguere, 48.
Evádere, *see* invádere, 67.
Fáre, 2.
Fêndere, 58.
Fêrvere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and is rare except in the third pers. of the pres. and imp. ind.*
Fígere, *see* fíggere, 59.
Fíggere, 59.
Fíngere, 60.
Fóndere, 61.
Frángere, 62.
Fríggere, 63.
Genuflêttere, 64.
Giacére, 11.
Gíre, *defect.: pres.* giámo, gíte; *imp.* gíva *or* gía, *etc.; imper.* giámo, gíte; *pres. subj.* giámo, giáte; *no pres. p.; rest reg.*
Giúgnere, *see* giúngere, 138.
Giúngere, 138.
Illúdere, *see* lúdere, 71.
Impêllere, *see* espêllere, 55.
Impêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.
Imprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
Incídere, *see* decídere, 44.
Inclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.
Incútere, *see* discútere, 47.
Indúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
Insístere, *see* esístere, 54.
Instáre *is reg.*
Instruíre, *see* construíre, 154.
Intêndere, *see* têndere, 118.
Intercêdere, *see* succêdere, 116.
Intrídere, 65.
Introdúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
Intrúdere, 66.
Invádere, 67.
Invalére, *p.p. only* inválso, *otherwise like* valére, 18.
Íre, *defect.: pres.* íte; *imp.* íva, *etc.; pret.* ísti, íste, íro; *fut.* irémo, iréte, iránno; *imper.* íte; *imp. subj.* ísse, íste, íssero; *p.p.* íto.
Istruíre, *see* costruíre, 154.
Lécere, *see* lícere, 70.
Lêdere, 68.
Lêggere, 69.
Lícere, 70.
Lúcere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
Lúdere, 71.
Mantenére, *see* tenére, 17.
Mêrgere, 72.
Méttere, 73.

Môlcere, 74.
Môrdere, 75.
Morire, 161.
Múgnere, 140.
Múngere, *see* múgnere, 140.
Muôvere, 76.
Náscere, 77.
Nascóndere, 78.
Negligere, 79.
Nuôcere, 130.
Offêndere, 80.
Offerire, *see* offrire, 151.
Offrire, 151.
Opprimere, *see* esprimere, 57.
Orire, 169.
Ostáre *is reg.*
Ostêndere, 81.
Parére, 20.
Percípere, 82.
Percuôtere, *see* scuôtere, 105.
Pêrdere, 83.
Permanére, *see* rimanére, 16.
Persistere, *see* esistere, 54.
Persuadére, 22.
Piacére, 12.
Piágnere, *see* piángere, 141.
Piángere, 141.
Pígnere, *see* píngere, 142.
Píngere, 142.
Piôvere, 84.
Pôrgere, 85.
Pórre, 131.
Pospórre, *see* pórre, 131.
Possedére, *see* sedére, 9.
Potére, 21.
Precídere, *see* decídere, 44.
Preclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.
Predilígere, 86.
Prêmere *is reg.*
Prêndere, 87.
Prestáre *is reg.*
Presúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.
Prevedére, *see* vedére, 10.
Prodúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
Protêggere, 88.
Provvedére, *fut. and cond. uncontracted, otherwise like* vedére, 10.
Prúdere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and is used only in the third pers.*
Púgnere, *see* púngere, 143.
Púngere, 143.
Raccôgliere, *see* côgliere, 134.
Rádere, 89.
Raggiúngere, *see* giúngere, 138.
Recídere, *see* decídere, 44.
Redímere, 90.
Rêggere, 91.
Rêndere, 92.
Repêllere, *see* espêllere, 55.
Reprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
Resístere, *see* esístere, 54.
Restáre *is reg.*
Rídere, 93.
Ridúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
Riflêttere, 94.
Rifúlgere, 95.
Rilúcere, 96.
Rimanére, 16.
Risôlvere (*dissolve*), *see* sôlvere, 107.
Risôlvere (*determine*), *see* assôlvere, 31
Rispóndere, 97.
Ristáre, *see* stáre, 4.
Risúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.
Ródere, 98.
Rómpere, 99.
Salíre, 165.
Sapére, 6.
Scégliere, 135.
Scéndere, 100.
Scérre, *see* scégliere, 135.

Scíndere, 101
Sciôgliere, 136.
Sciôlvere, 102.
Sciôrre, *see* sciôgliere, 136.
Scomméttere, *see* méttere, 73.
Scoprírе, *see* coprírе, 150.
Scôrgere, 103.
Scrívere, 104.
Scuôtere, 105.
Sdrucírе, 159.
Sdruscírе, *see* sdrucírе, 159.
Sedére, 9.
Sedúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
Seguírе, 162.
Sepellírе, *see* seppellírе, 157.
Seppellírе, 157.
Sofferírе, *see* soffrírе, 152.
Soffólcere, 106.
Soffrírе, 152.
Solére, 14.
Sôlvere, 107.
Sopprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.
Soprastáre, *see* stáre, 4.
Sórgere, 108.
Sospêndere, 109.
Sostáre *is reg.*
Sottostáre, *see* stáre, 4.
Sovrastáre, *see* stáre, 4.
Spándere, 110.
Spárgere, 111.
Sparírе, 163.
Spêgnere, 144.
Spêndere, 112.
Spêngere, *see* spêgnere, 144.
Spêrgere, 113.
Spígnere, *see* spíngere, 145.
Spíngere, 145.
Spôrgere, 114.
Stáre, 4.
Strídere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*
Strígnere, *see* stríngere, 146.
Stríngere, 146.
Strúggere, 115.
Subírе *is reg.: pres.* subisco.
Succêdere, 116.
Súggere, 117.
Sussístere, *see* esístere, 54.
Svêllere, *see* vêllere, 133.
Tacére, 13.
Têndere (*trans.*), 118. [*p.p.*
Têndere (*intrans.*), *reg. verb, has no*
Tenére, 17.
Têrgere, 119.
Tígnere, *see* tíngere, 147.
Tíngere, 147.
Tôgliere, 137.
Tôrcere, 120.
Tôrre, *see* tôgliere, 137.
Tradúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.
Tráere, *see* trárre, 132.
Transígere, *see* esígere, 53.
Trárre, 132.
Uccídere, 121.
Udírе, 167.
Úgnere, *see* úngere, 148.
Úngere, 148.
Uscírе, 168.
Valére, 18.
Vedére, 10.
Vêllere, 133.
Venírе, 166.
Vêrre, *see* vêllere, 133.
Vêrtere, *reg. verb, is used only in the pres. and imp.*
Vilipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.
Víncere, 122.
Vívere, 123.
Volére, 19.
Vôlgere, 124.
Vôlvere, 125.

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

A, to, at, in.
A', **ái**, **al**, *etc.* = a + *art.*
Abbellíto, beautified.
Accompagnáre, accompany.
Accôrgersi, perceive.
Ácqua, water.
Ad, *see* **A**.
Affacciársi, place one's self (*at a window*).
Affrettáre, hasten.
Agguantáre, seize.
Agostíno, Gus.
Álbero, tree.
Ále, wing.
Alétta, little wing.
Alettína, little wing.
Alfrédo, Alfred.
Allontanáre, send off.
Allóra, then.
Áltro, other.
Amáro, bitter.
Ánche, also, even.
Andár, *see* **Andáre**.
Andáre, go, to go, going.
Andársene, go away.
Andáto, gone.
Anêllo, ring.
Animále, animal.
Animalíno, little creature.
Antíco, old.
Ápe, bee.
Appéna, hardly.
Appôsta, on purpose.
Ária, air.
Arricchíto, enriched.
Arriváre, arrive.
Arrivàto, having arrived.
Ásino, ass.
Assalíre, attack.
Assênzio, wormwood.
Assolúto, absolute.
Áttimo, flash.
Avánti a, in front of.
Avére, have.
Avvedérsi di, perceive.
Azionáccia, *from* **Azióne**.
Azióne, action.
Bábbo, father, papa.
Badáre, keep.
Bagnáre, bathe.
Bambíno, child.
Bárbaro, barbarian.
Barbóne, water-spaniel.
Baróne, baron.
Bastóne, stick.
Bel, *see* **Bêllo**.
Bellíssimo, very beautiful.
Bêllo, beautiful, fine, kind.
Ben, *see* **Bêne**.
Bêne, well, nicely, much.
Bêne, good (*noun*).
Bócca, mouth.
Bôve, ox.
Brávo, worthy.

Brilláre, shine.
Brútto, ugly.
Bucáto, pricked.
Bugía, lie.
Búio, dark.
Buôno, good.
Buttáre, throw. *Buttár giù* = swallow.
Cadére, fall.
Calzóni, trousers.
Can, *see* **Cáne**.
Cáne, dog,
Capáce, capable.
Cápo, head. *Da cápo, daccápo* = once more.
Cappêllo, hat.
Carlomágno, Charlemagne.
Cárne, flesh.
Cása, house, home.
Cascáre, fall.
Cassétta, drawer.
Cassettóne, bureau.
Castêllo, castle.
Cattívo, bad, naughty.
Cêlia, trick.
Cênto, a hundred.
Cercáre, search.
Cêrto, certain, some.
Cespúglio, bush.
Che, who, which, that.
Che, what. *Che cósa* = what.
Che, that.
Che, than.
Chi . . . chi, one . . . another.
Chiamáre, call.
Chícca, sweetmeat.
Ci, there.
Cínque, five.
Città, city.
Cittadíno, citizen.
Códa, tail.
Cógli, col, *etc.* = **con** + *art.*
Cógliere, catch, pick.
Cóllo, neck.
Cóme, as, like, how, when.
Cominciáre, begin.
Commêttere, commit.
Compágno, companion.
Comúne, town. *Comúni* = commons.
Con, with.
Confêtti, candy.
Conóscere, know, find out.
Cónte, count.
Continovaménte, continually.
Contínuo, continual.
Cónto, count.
Côrpo, body.
Corrêggersi, reform.
Cósa, thing. *Cósa púbblica* = government.
Così, so, thus.
Creatúra, creature.
Crédere, believe.
Cúi, whom, whose.
Curiosità, curiosity.
Curióso, curious, funny.
Da, by, from, as to. *Dálle párti* = at the sides.
Daccápo, *see* **Cápo**.
Dái, dal, *etc.* = **da** + *art.*
Dáre, give, look.
De', dégli, déi, del, *etc.* = **di** + *art*
Desidêrio, desire.
Détto, said, told.
Di, of, than, to, with.

Dicêrto, surely.
Di dietro, from behind.
Diêci, ten.
Diêtro, behind, after. *Di dietro* = from behind. *Dietro a* = after.
Dintórni, neighborhood.
Dío, God.
Díre, say, speak.
Dirítto, right.
Discórso, talk.
Disobbediênte, disobedient.
Disperáto, desperate.
Distánza, distance.
Distrúggere, destroy.
Disubbidiênte, disobedient.
Ditíno, *from* **Díto**.
Díto, finger. *Dito grôsso* = thumb.
Diventáre, become.
Dódici, twelve.
Dolóre, pain.
Dópo, after.
Dóve, where.
Dovére, ought, must.
Dúe, two.
Dúnque, therefore.
Duránte, during.
E, and.
Êcco, this is.
Ed, and.
Enríco, Henry.
Éssa, it.
Ésse, them.
Êssere, be. *Êssere per* = be about to.
Éssi, them.
Ésso, it.
Fállo, fault.
Fancitúllo, child.
Fáre, make, let.
Farfálla, butterfly.
Fasciáre, bandage.
Fêrro, iron.
Figliuôlo, child, son.
Figurársi, imagine.
Finchè non, until.
Finêstra, window.
Finíre, finish.
Fino a, up to.
Fióre, flower.
Fioríto, flowery.
Firênze, Florence.
Firmaménto, firmament.
Fôglia, leaf.
Fónte, fountain.
Forestiêro, foreign.
Fra, between, in, to.
Fréddo, cold.
Frónte, forehead.
Frútto, fruit.
Fuggíre, flee.
Fuôri, out.
Fúria, haste.
Gámba, leg.
Gámbo, stem.
Gátto, cat.
Genitóri, parents.
Già, already.
Giardíno, garden.
Gíglio, lily.
Giorgétto, Georgie.
Giórno, day.
Girár, *see* **Giráre**.
Giráre, go around.
Giráto, gone around.
Gíro, turn, circuit.
Gíro gíro a, round and round.

Giù, down.
Giudízio, judgment, idea.
Gli, the.
Gli, it.
Gli, to him.
Glie, *see* **Gli**, **Le**.
Glôbo, globe.
Golóso, glutton, greedy.
Governáto, governed.
Gránde, big.
Grandíssimo, very big.
Grído, shout.
Grôsso, big.
Guardársi, refrain.
I, the.
Il, the.
Illumináto, illumined.
Il quále, who.
Imperatóre, emperor.
Impêro, empire.
In, in.
Infátti, in fact.
Infinitaménte, infinitely.
Infíno, even.
Infocáto, blazing.
Ingordígia, gluttony.
Insegnáre, teach.
Insêtto, insect.
Insiême, together.
Insómma, in short.
Intendiménto, intelligence.
Intórno, around (*adv.*).
Intórno a, around (*prep.*).
Invasióne, invasion.
Ispiráre, inspire.
L', *see* **La**, **Le**, **Lo**.
La, the.
La, it, her.
Là, there. *Di là* = there.
Laceráre, tear.
Ládra, thief.
Ládro, robber.
Lámpo, flash.
Lanciétta, hand.
Lasciáre, leave, let, let go.
Lasciáto, let.
Lavoráre, work.
Le, the.
Le, to her, to it.
Le, them.
Leóne, lion.
Lêsto, quick.
Leváre, take away. *Levársi* (*with direct object*) = get rid of.
Leváto, up.
Li, them.
Là, there.
Líbero, free.
Lo, the.
Lo, him, it.
Longobárdo, Longobard.
Lontáno, distant.
Lóro, them, their.
Lúce, light.
Lucêrtola, lizard.
Lúi, him, he.
Lúme, light.
Luminóso, luminous.
Lúna, moon.
Ma, but.
Mádre, mother.
Maestóso, majestic.
Maêstra, school-mistress.
Maêstro, school-master.
Mággio, May.
Maggióre, larger.

Mái, ever. *Non mái* = never.
Malánno, harm. *Far malánni* = mischief-making.
Maláta, ill.
Maldicênte, gossip.
Mále, badly, ill.
Mále, wicked.
Mámma, mother, mamma.
Mandáre, send.
Mangiáre, eat.
Maniêra, manner.
Máno, hand.
Mattína, morning.
Méno, less.
Ménto, chin.
Méntre, while.
Meravigliόso, wonderful.
Metà, half.
Méttere, put. *Méttersi* = begin, put on.
Mêzzo, half.
Mêzzo, middle. *In mèzzo a* = in the middle of.
Mício, puss, cat.
Milióne, million.
Minacciáre, threaten.
Minόre, smaller.
Minúto, minute.
Mío, my.
Môdo, way.
Molestáre, annoy.
Mólti, many.
Mólto, much.
Môrdere, bite.
Mósca, fly.
Móstra, face.
Múro, wall.
Mutáre, change.
Nascósto, hidden.
Náso, nose.
Náto, born.
Ne, of it, for it.
Nè, nor.
Néi, nel, *etc.* = **in** + *art.*
Nemméno, even.
Nessúno, nobody.
Niccolíno, Nicholas, Nick.
Nído, nest.
No, no. *Di no* = no.
Nôbile, noble.
Nobiltà, nobility.
Nόi, we, us.
Nôia, trouble.
Non, not. *Non . . . che* = only.
Nôstro, our.
Nôtte, night.
Nôve, nine.
Núlla, nothing.
Número, number.
O, or.
O, oh.
Ôcchio, eye.
Occhióne, *from* **Ôcchio.**
Odóre, odor.
Ógni, every.
Ognúno, everybody.
Óltre, beyond, over.
Óra, now.
Óra, hour.
Oramái, at last.
Orígine, origin.
Όro, gold.
Orolôgio, watch.
Ôtto, eight.
Padroncíno, little master.
Palázzo, palace.

Panièra, basket.
Panieríno, *from* **Panièra**.
Pánni, clothes.
Parécchio, some.
Parére, seem.
Párte, part, side. *Dálle pàrti* = at the sides. *A quésta pàrte* = to this time.
Partecipáre, participate.
Pásso, step.
Pátto, condition. *A pàtto che* = on condition that.
Pel = **per il**.
Pensáre, think.
Per, for, in order to, on account of, through, by.
Perchè, why, because.
Pèrdere, lose.
Perdonáre, pardon.
Permésso, permission.
Però, therefore, however.
Pésce, fish.
Pètto, chest.
Piánta, plant.
Picchiáre, strike.
Piccíno, tiny, small.
Píccolo, little, small.
Piède, foot.
Piêno, full.
Pigliáre, take.
Pínna, fin.
Più, more, most.
Po', little.
Pôi, then, too.
Portáre, take, bring.
Potére, can, be able.
Pôvero, poor.
Prèndere, take.
Prèsso, near.
Prèsto, early.
Pretèndere, expect.
Prevalére, prevail.
Prímo, first.
Prónto, quick.
Púbblico, public.
Punire, punish.
Púnto, point.
Quadrúpede, quadruped.
Quálche, some.
Qualchedúno, somebody.
Qualcôsa, anything.
Qualcúno, somebody.
Quále, *see* **Il quale**.
Quándo, when.
Quánto, as much.
Quattórdici, fourteen.
Quáttro, four.
Que', **quéi**, *pl. of* **Quéllo**.
Quégli, *pl. of* **Quéllo**.
Quel, *see* **Quéllo**.
Quéllo, that, that one.
Quésto, this, this one.
Qui, here. *Di qui* = here.
Quíndi, therefore.
Raccontáre, relate.
Raggiúngere, overtake.
Ragióne, reason.
Rasènte, close.
Refezióne, lunch.
Règgere, stand, endure.
Respiráre, breathe.
Rèttile, reptile.
Riccárdo, Richard.
Ricominciáre, begin again.
Ricordársi, remember.
Ricreazióne, recess.

Rídere, laugh.
Ríga, line. *Di prima riga* = first-class.
Righettína, little mark.
Rimandáre, send back.
Rimanére, remain.
Rimediáre a, atone for.
Rimproveráre, reprove.
Ripêtere, repeat.
Ripôso, rest.
Rispóndere, reply.
Risputáre, spit again.
Rómpere, break.
Rôsa, rose.
Rotóndo, round.
Rubáre, steal.
Sanguinóso, bloody.
Sapére, know, hear.
Saporáccio, *from* **Sapóre**.
Sapóre, taste.
Sásso, stone.
Scappáre, run away.
Scêna, scene.
Scénder, *see* **Scéndere**.
Scéndere, descend.
Scuôla, school.
Se, if, whether.
Se, *see* **Sí**.
Sè, itself, himself, herself.
Secóndo che, according as.
Segnáto, marked.
Seguíre, turn out.
Sêi, six.
Sêmpre, always.
Senése, Sienese.
Sentíre, taste, hear.
Sénza, without.
Sêrpe, snake.
Servitóre, servant.
Sessánta, sixty.
Sêtte, seven.
Sfacciatággine, impudence.
Sí, himself, herself, itself.
Sì, yes, so.
Signóra, lady.
Signóre, gentleman.
Signoría, rule.
Símile, like.
Smisuráto, boundless.
Soáve, sweet.
Solaménte, only.
Sóle, sun.
Sollécito, early, brisk.
Sólo, alone.
Sommáto, added.
Sópra, on, above. *Di sópra* = up, above.
Sorêlla, sister.
Sorellína, *from* **Sorêlla**.
Sôrte, lucky.
Sospettáre, suspect.
Sospêtto, suspicion.
Sostégno, support.
Sótto, under. *Di sótto* = down, underneath.
Sparíre, disappear.
Spícchio, slice.
Spína, thorn.
Sputáre, spit.
Stánza, room.
Stáre, stay, stand.
Stélla, star.
Stésso, himself.
Stésso, same.
Stésso, even.
Stracciáre, tear.

Strétto, close, tight.
Strilláre, scream.
Su, on, up.
Su', **sul**, *etc.* = **su** + *art.*
Súbito, at once.
Súo, its, his, her.
Tánto, so much, so, much.
Tánto . . . quánto, both . . . and.
Te, thee, you.
Têmpo, time.
Tenúto, held.
Têrra, earth, ground, land.
Territôrio, territory.
Ti, thee, you.
Tiráre, throw, draw. *Tirár fuóri*, take out.
Tócco, one o'clock.
Tornáre, return, returning.
Tórno tórno a, round and round.
Toscáno, Tuscan.
Tra, among, to.
Tranquillaménte, tranquilly.
Trátto: *a un trátto* = all at once.
Traversáre, cross.
Tre, three.
Trédici, thirteen.
Trónco, trunk.
Trováre, find.
Tu, thou, you.
Túo, thy, your.
Tútto, all. *Per tútto* = everywhere. *Tútti e dúe* = both; *tútti e tre* = all three; *etc.*
Uccellíno, *from* **Uccêllo.**
Uccêllo, bird.
Un, a, one.
Úna, a, one.
Úndici, eleven.
Úno, a, one.
Uôvo, egg.
Urláre, yell.
Úscio, door.
Vassoíno, tray.
Vedére, see.
Ventiquáttro, twenty-four.
Verità, truth.
Véro, true.
Véscovo, bishop.
Vêspa, wasp.
Vestíre, dress.
Vía, off, away, so forth. *Sometimes used instead of a verb of motion.*
Viággio, way, journey.
Vicíno, near.
Viôla, violet.
Viôttola, path.
Víso, face.
Víspo, lively.
Viziáccio, *from* **Vízio.**
Vízio, vice.
Vóce, voice.
Vôglia, desire.
Volére, wish.
Volontariaménte, voluntarily.
Vôlta, time.
Voltár, *see* **Voltáre.**
Voltáre, turn.
Zámpa, paw, foot.
Zampína, little paw.
Zanzára, mosquito.
Zimbêllo, laughing-stock.

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY.

A, un, úno, úna.
Africa, Áffrica.
After, dópo.
Ago, fa.
Aim, miráre.
Air, ária.
All, tútto.
Alone, sólo.
Although, sebbêne.
Always, sêmpre.
Amaze, meravigliáre.
America, Amêrica.
An, *see* **A**.
Ancient, antíco.
And, e.
Another, un áltro.
April, aprîle, *m.*
Around, intórno.
As, cóme.
As . . . as, quánto, tánto . . . cóme.
Asia, Ásia.
At, a.
Attach, attaccáre.
August, agósto.
Be, êssere, *irreg.* (**53**, *a*).
Beam, tráve, *f. or m.*
Beast, béstia.
Beautiful, bêllo.
Because, perchè.
Begin, cominciáre.
Believe, crédere.
Big, grôsso.
Bird, uccêllo.
Black, néro.
Blood, sángue, *m.*
Boil, bollíre.
Born, náto. *Pl.:* náti, *m.*; náte, *f.*
Boy, ragázzo.
Branch, rámo.
Bread, páne, *m.*
Brother, fratêllo, *m.*
Bubble, vescichétta.
But, ma.
By, da. *By chance* = per cáso.
Call, chiamáre.
Capital, capitále, *f.*
Car, vagóne, *m.*
Care, cúra.
Carriage, carrôzza.
Carry, portáre.
Case, cáso.
Ceiling, pálco.
Chance, cáso. *By chance* = per cáso.
Charged, cárico.
Charity, carità, *f.*
Charles, Cárlo.
Choose, scégliere, *irreg.*
Christopher, Cristôforo.
Circle, tóndo.
City, città, *f.*
Cloud, núvola.
Club, bastóne, *m.*
Coat, ábito.

Collect, raccôgliere, *irreg.*
Columbus, Colómbo.
Come back, tornáre.
Companion, compágno.
Confined, tenúto.
Construct, costruíre, *irreg.*
Continue, seguitáre.
Contrary, contrário.
Cool, raffreddársi.
Corner, cánto.
Country, paése, *m.*
Cover, copríre, *irreg.*
Creature, animále, *m.*
Crumb, bríciola.
Crush, schiacciáre.
Dark, búio.
Day, giórno.
December, dicêmbre, *m.*
Dense, dênso.
Department, dipartiménto.
Discover, scopríre, *irreg.*
Distance, distánza.
Divide, divídere, *irreg.*
Do, fáre, *irreg.*
Dominion, domínio.
Door, úscio.
Down, giù.
Dream, sognáre.
Drop, gócciola. *Drop by drop* = a gócciola a gócciola.
Duke, dúca, *m.*
Dungeon, cárcere, *f.*
Dust, pólvere, *f.*
Earn, guadagnáre.
Earth, têrra.
Eight hundred, ottocênto.
Eighty, ottánta.
Either . . . or, o . . . o.
Emmanuel, Emanuêle.
Emperor, imperatóre, *m.*
Empty, vuôto.
End, termináre.
Enemy, nemíco.
Escape, scappáre.
Europe, Eurôpa.
Even, ánche.
Ever, mái.
Every, ógni.
Everything, tútto.
Everywhere, per tútto.
Eye, *noun*, ôcchio.
Eye, *vb.*, occhiáre.
Fall, cadúta.
Family, famíglia, *f.*
Far, lontáno, *adv. and adj.*
Father, pádre, *m.*, bábbo.
February, febbráio.
Fief, fêudo.
Fifth, quínto.
Find, trováre.
Finger, díto. *Pl.* díta, *f.*
Fire, fuôco.
First, prímo. *Adv.*, príma.
Five, cínque.
Flat, piátto.
Flee, fuggíre.
Flower, fióre, *m.*
Fly, voláre.
Food, mangiáre, *m.*
For, per. *For yourself* (*conjunctive*) = vi, si.
Form, formáre.
Fort, fortézza.
Forth, fuôri.
Forty, quaránta.
Four, quáttro.

Four hundred, quattrocênto.
France, Fráncia, *f.*
Friday, venerdì, *m.*
Friend, amíco, *m.*, **23**, *c*, (2).
From, da.
Fruit, frútto.
Furniture, mobília.
Genoa, Gênova.
Give, dáre, *irreg.*
Go, andáre, *irreg.*
Good, buôno.
Grain, gráno.
Great, gránde.
Ground, têrra.
Grove, boschétto.
Grow up, venír su, *irreg.*
Gun, schiôppo, fucíle, *m.*
Hand, máno, *f.*
Happen, accadére, *irreg.*
Hardly, appéna.
Hasten, affrettársi.
Hate, odiáre.
Have, avére, *irreg.* (**53**, *b*).
He, égli, lúi.
Heat, cáldo.
Her, la, le, lêi.
Herb, êrba.
Here, qua.
High, álto.
Him, lo, gli, lúi. *To him* = gli, a lúi.
Himself, si.
His, súo.
History, stôria.
Holiday, fêsta.
Honest, onêsto.
However, tuttavía.
Hunter, cacciatóre, *m.*
I, ío.
If, se.
Imagine, immagináre.
In, in.
Indeed, davvéro.
Inhabit, abitáre.
Inside, didéntro.
Instance, esêmpio.
Intense, vívo.
Intention, intenzióne, *f.*
Into, in.
It, lo, la, égli, gli.
Italian, italiáno.
Italy, Itália, *f.*
Its, súo, súa.
Itself, si.
Jailer, carcerière, *m.*
January, gennáio.
July, lúglio.
June, giúgno.
King, re, *m.*
Know, sapére, *irreg.*, conóscere (= *be acquainted with*), *irreg.*
Land, paése, *m.*, têrra.
Large, gránde.
Last, último (*precedes noun*). *Last year* = l' ánno scórso.
Latter, quésto. *The latter* = quésti, *m. sing.*
Leaf, fôglia.
Leap-year, bisestíle, *m.*
Learn, imparáre.
Left, sinístra.
Lid, têsto.
Lift, solleváre.
Light, lúce, *f.*
Like, cóme.
Little (= *small*), píccolo, piccíno.

Little (= *a small quantity*), pôco.
Little by little = a pôco a pôco.
Live, vívere, *irreg.*
Loaded, cárico.
Lorraine: *of Lorraine* = lorenése.
Loud, fôrte.
Low, básso.
Lower, abbassáre.
Man, uômo, *pl.* uômini.
Many, mólti, *m.*, mólte, *f.*
March, márzo.
Mask, máschera.
May, mággio.
Me, mi, me.
Melon, cocómero.
Merchant, mercánte, *m.*
Middle, mêzzo.
Mignonette, amoríno.
Mine, mío.
Moisture, umidità, *f.*
Monday, lunedì, *m.*
Month, mése, *m.*
Moon, lúna.
More, più.
Mortify, mortificáre.
Most, il più.
Mr., signór.
My, mío.
Name, nóme, *m.*
Napoleon, Napoleóne.
Near, vicíno a.
Need, bisógno.
Never, non . . . mái.
Nice, gentíle.
Ninety, novánta.
No, no.
Nobody nessúno.
Nor, nè.
Not, non.
November, novêmbre.
Now, óra.
Object, oggêtto.
Observe, osserváre.
Oceanica, Oceánia.
October, ottóbre.
Of, di. *Of them* = ne.
On, sópra, su (*before vow.*, sur).
One, úno.
One's self, si.
Only, sólo (*adj.*), non . . . che (*adv.*).
Opposite, oppósto.
Or, o.
Other, áltro.
Ought, dovére, *irreg.*
Out, fuôri.
Outside, difuôri, *m.*
Over there, laggiù.
Pace, pásso.
Parents, genitóri, *m. pl.*
Paris, Parígi.
Parrot, pappagállo.
Part, párte, *f.*
Peasant, contadíno.
Perfectly, prôprio.
Perhaps, fórse.
Persuade, persuadére, *irreg.*
Philip, Filíppo.
Place, luôgo.
Placed, pósto.
Plainly, schiettaménte.
Plant, piánta.
Point, púnto.
Poor, pôvero.
Pot, péntola.
Present, presentáre.

Prevent, impedíre.
Principle, princípio.
Prison, prigióne, *f.*
Prisoner, prigionièro.
Profession, professióne, *f.*
Purpose, úso.
Quantity, quantità, *f.*
Question, dománda.
Rain, piôggia.
Raise, leváre.
Rare, ráro.
Recognized, conosciúto.
Relate, raccontáre.
Remain, rimanére, *irreg.*, restáre.
Repeat, ripêtere.
Reply, rispóndere, *irreg.*
Resolve, risciôgliere, *irreg.*
Rest, posáre.
Right, dêstra.
Rise, salíre, *irreg.*
Room, stánza.
Root, radíce, *f.*
Round, rotóndo.
Rule, signoría.
Sacrifice, sacrifízio.
Sail, navigáre.
Sailor, marináro.
Same, stésso (*precedes noun*).
Satisfy, contentáre.
Saturday, sábato.
Say, díre, *irreg.*
Sea, máre, *m.*
Second, secóndo.
See, vedére, *irreg.*
Seed, séme, *m.*
Sent, mandáto.
September, settêmbre, *m.*
Service, servízio.
Seven, sêtte.
Shake, scuôtere, *irreg.*
Ship, náve, *f.*
Shoot, bárba.
Short, córto.
Show off, far vedére, *irreg.*
Side, párte, *f.*
Silence, silênzio.
Sinister, sinístro.
Sir, signóre, *m.*
Sixty, sessánta.
Sky, ciêlo.
Small, píccolo, piccíno.
Smoke, fúmo.
So, così.
So as to, per.
Some, quálche.
Somebody else, qualchedun' áltro.
Sometimes, qualchevôlta.
So much, tánto.
Son, fíglio.
Sort, sôrta.
Spaniard, spagnuôlo.
Speak, parláre.
Spider, rágno, rágnolo.
Sprouted, germogliáto.
Stalk, fústo.
Star, stélla.
Steam, vapóre, *m.*
Straight, dirítto.
Study, *noun*, stúdio.
Study, *vb.*, studiáre.
Sun, sóle, *m.*
Sunday, doménica.
Support, mantenére, *irreg.*
Surprised, sorpréso.
Surround, circondáre.

Table, távola.
Take, prêndere, ***irreg.***
Tear, raschiáre.
Than, che, di.
Thanks, grázie, *f. pl.*
That, *conj.*, che.
That, *rel. pron.*, che.
That, *demons. pron.*, quéllo.
The, il, lo, la, i gli, le.
Them, li, le, lóro. *Of them* = ne.
Then, pôi.
There, là, lì.
Therefore, però.
They, éssi, ésse, lóro.
Thick, grôsso.
Thing, côsa.
Think, pensáre.
Third, têrzo.
Thirtieth, trentêsimo.
Thirty, trénta.
Thirty-first, trentêsimo prímo.
Thirty-one, trentúno, trentún.
This, quésto.
Thousand, míle.
Three, tre.
Three hundred, trecênto.
Thursday, giovedì, *m.*
Thus, così.
Time, (*Ex.* 2) vôlta; (*Ex.* 18 *and* 20) têmpo.
To, a. *To him* = gli.
Together, insiême.
Too (= *also*), ánche.
Too (= *excessively*), tróppo.
Tree, álbero.
Trunk, trónco.
Tuesday, martedì, *m.*
Turn, giráre.
Tuscan, toscáno.
Twelve, dódici.
Twenty-eight, ventôtto.
Twenty-nine, ventinôve.
Twig, ramoscêllo.
Two, dúe.
Under, sótto.
Unfortunate, infelíce.
Unhappy, sventuráto.
Union, unióne, *f.*
Unite, raccôgliere, ***irreg.***
Until, *prep.*, fíno a.
Until, *conj.*, finchè . . . **non**.
Us, nói, ci (*conjunctive*).
Usual, usáto.
Vapor, vapóre, *m.*
Vegetable, vegetábile, *m.*
Very, mólto, tánto.
Victor, Vittôrio.
Villa, vílla.
Village, villággio.
Water, ácqua.
Way (= *manner*), maniêra.
We, nói.
Web, téla.
Wednesday, mercoledì, *m.*
Week, settimána.
What, *interrog. and exclam.* che.
What, *rel.*, quéllo **che**.
When, quándo.
Where, dóve.
Which, che.
While, méntre.
Who, *rel.*, che.
Whom, *rel.*, cúi.
Willingly, volentiêri.
Wind, vênto.

Window, finêstra.
With, con.
Without, sénza.
Wood, bôsco.
Word, parôla.
Working-day, giórno di lavóro.
World, móndo.

Year, ánno.
Yes, già.
You, vói, vi, Lêi, la, le. *To you* = vi, le.
Your, vôstro, Súo.
Yourself, vi, si. *For yourself* = vi, si.

APPENDIX.

ADDITIONAL NOTES ON PRONUNCIATION.

[The numbers prefixed to the following notes refer to the paragraphs of the first chapter in this book.]

1. The Tuscan names of the letters are: *a, bi, ci, di, é, èffe, gi, ácca, i, jé* or *i lúngo, èlle, èmme, ènne, ó, pi, cu, èrre, èsse, ti, u, vu* or *vi, zèta* (with *z* pronounced *dz*). They do not change in the plural. Their gender is not fixed; in general those ending in *a* or *e* are considered as feminine, the others as masculine. *K, x, y* are *cáppa, ìccase, ìpsilon*, all masculine.

2. α. The sounds *á, é, ó*, followed by a single consonant, are somewhat longer than the other vowels: for instance, in *dáto, fére, óvo* the accented *a, e, o* are longer than in *dáttero, véro, óve*. Final accented vowels sound particularly short: as in *amò, beltà, caffè*.

β. In forming *i* the mouth should be made as broad as possible from side to side. For *u* and *ó* the lips should be puckered. For *a* and *é* the mouth should be opened very wide.

3. α. If an adverb in *-ménte* is formed from an adjective containing *é* or *ó*, this vowel has, in the adverb, a secondary accent, and retains its open sound: as (*bréve*) *brèveménte*, "briefly"; (*nóbile*) *nòbilménte*, "nobly." Furthermore, *é* and *ó* retain their quality in seeming compounds that consist, in reality, of two or more separate words: as *tostochè* = *tóstoché* = *tósto che*, "as soon as."

β. Preterites and past participles in *-esi, -eso, -osi, -oso* have a close *e* or *o*; except *chiési* (also *chiési*), *esplósi, esplóso, lési* (not used), *léso*.

γ. In the suffixes *-eccio* (*-a*), *-esco* (*-a*), *-ese*, *-essa*, *-etto* (*-a*), *-ezzo* (*-a*), *-mente*, and *-mento* the *e* is always close; while in the diminutive suffix *-ello* (*-a*), and in the endings *-ente*, *-enza*, *-erio* (or *-ero*), and *-esimo* (*-a*) it is open: as *inglése*, "English"; *probabilménte*, "probably"; *prudênte*, "prudent"; *ventêsimo*, "twentieth."

δ. In the endings *-oio*, *-one*, *-ore*, and in the suffix *-oso* (*-a*) the *o* is close; while in the ending *-orio*, and in *-occio* (*-a*), *-otto* (*-a*), and *-ozzo* (*-a*), used as suffixes to nouns or adjectives, it is open: as *vassóio*, "tray"; *amóre*, "love"; *romitôrio*, "hermitage"; *casôtta*, "good-sized house."

ε. In the following cases accented *e* or *o* may have either the close or the open sound: in *Giorgio*, *maestra*, *maestro*, *nego* (from *negáre*), *neve*, *organo*, *scendere*, *senza*, *siete* and *sono* (from *êssere*), *spegnere*, *Stefano*, *vendere*; and in the conditional endings *-esti*, *-emmo*, *-este*. The present subjunctive forms *dieno*, *sieno*, *stieno* are pronounced also *diêno*, *siêno*, *stiêno*.

ζ. In poetry we often find *ê* for *iê*, *ô* for *uô*: as *ven* = *viêne*, "he comes"; *cor* = *cuôre*, "heart."

4. **C.** α. Between two vowels, of which the second is *e* or *i*, single *c* and single *g* are, in ordinary Tuscan speech, pronounced respectively like *sh* in "ship" and *si* in "vision": as *pâce*, "peace"; *stagióne*, "season."

β. Between two vowels, of which the second is *a*, *o*, or *u*, a single *c* is, in popular Tuscan speech, sounded nearly like English *h*: as *poco* (*pôho*), "little"; *di questa cosa* (*di hwésta hôsa*), "of this thing." This pronunciation is regarded as vulgar.

J. Some writers use *j*, except after a consonant, for the *i* that is pronounced *y*: as *jeri* for *iêri*, "yesterday"; *pajo* for *pâio*, "pair." It is sometimes used also for final *i* in the plural of words in unaccented *-io*: as *specchj* (also *specchî* and occasionally *specchii*) for *spêcchi*, "mirrors," plural of *spêcchio*.

Z. Aside from verbs in *-izzáre*, *z* and *zz* have the value *dz* in the following words and their derivatives: —

arzíllo	frízzo	magazzíno	románzo	zêlo
azzúrro	garzóne	mánzo	ronzío	zenít
barzellétta	gazzêlla	mêzzo	rózzo	zêro
bízza	gazzétta	orizzónte	zaffíro	zêta
brézza	gónzo	ôrzo	zaffróne	zínco
brónzo	Lázzaro	pênzolo	zanzára	zodíaco
donzêlla	lazzerétto	pránzo	zêbra	zôlla
dozzína	lázzo	ribrézzo	zêffiro	zôna

also in all derivatives of the Greek *zoos*, and in many uncommon words.

5. In pronouncing *gli* and *gn* the point of the tongue should remain behind the lower teeth: as *figlio*, "son"; *ógni*, "every."

6. If one of the words mentioned below, or any oxytone ending in a vowel, is closely followed by a word beginning with a consonant, this consonant is, in Tuscany, generally pronounced double. The words are:*—

a	dì, *day*	giù	o §	sópra
che	di', *say*	ha	più	sta †
chi	e	ho	qua	sto
ciò	è	ínfra	quálche	su
cóme	fa †	íntra	qui	te ‡
cóntra	fè, *faith*	là	re	tra
da	fe' = féce	lì	sa	tre
dà, *gives*	fo	ma	se, *if*	tu
da', *give*	fra	me ‡	sè	va †
do	fu	mo' = môdo	sì	vo = vádo
dóve	già	nè	so	vo' = vôglio

Ex.: *verrà da me domani* (*verràddammèddománi*), "he will come to my house to-morrow." In such cases *c* is, of course, never pronounced like *h* (see 4, C, β).

---

* The materials for this list were taken from D' Ovidio's article in Gröber's *Grundriss der romanischen Philologie*, p. 496.

† Both the imperative sing. and the pres. ind. third sing.

‡ The disjunctive form.

§ Both the conjunction "or" and the interrogative particle.

INFLECTIONS OF THE VOICE.

1. Italian speech is at once smoother and less monotonous than American: it is less interrupted by breathings, and it has far greater variations of pitch. In order to speak or read Italian well, an American must learn to breathe in speaking as he does in singing; he must inhale deeply at the beginning of the clause, and not stop again until he reaches the end of it. The following directions may be of use; they are based on the Tuscan pronunciation, and particularly on that of Siena.

2. α. The simplest inflection in a declarative sentence is as follows: at the beginning the voice is pitched low; it rises in the middle (in earnest conversation often to a falsetto), and falls again at the end. The most emphatic word generally receives the highest tone; if there are no words after it to complete the cadence, the first words of the phrase are often repeated at the end: as *me lo dícono túttì me lo dícono* ("they all tell me so"), where the *u* of *túttì* is an octave higher than the beginning and the close of the sentence.

β. When there is a pause on some not particularly emphatic word before the main verb, that word has a slight circumflex accent, the voice rising about one semitone and falling about three: as *fuôri di città* ∧ *c' è úna bellíssima villa*\ ("outside the city there's a beautiful villa"), where *bellíssima* has the high pitch, and the *a* of *città* has the circumflex. This accent is generally heard whenever modifying clauses or phrases precede the main clause.

γ. Almost all declarative sentences are made up chiefly of these two inflections, the long rise and fall and the short circumflex. Americans must avoid breaking up their sentences by meaningless falling tones. The fall occurs in Italian, as in English, on a very emphatic word, and at the end of a sentence. It is used, also, with a verb of saying or thinking, followed by a direct quotation;

and with any word or phrase used as a vocative, except in loud calling (see 4, β) : as *allóra chiáma Alfrédo e gli dice* \ : *Bambino* \ , *dimmi la verità* \ (*Grammar*, Exercise 17), where the syllables *fre*, *bam*, and *dim* have the highest pitch.

3. α. Questions to which the answer may be "yes" or "no" have either one of two circumflex accents: in the first the voice rises about five semitones and falls one; in the second, which is sometimes used in reading and in polite phrases, the voice rises and falls about an octave. Ex.: *l' hái visto* ("have you seen him?"), where the pitches of *l' hái*, *vi*, and *sto* may be represented by the notes *do*, *fa*, *mi*; *ha bên dormito* ("did you sleep well?"), where *mi* is an octave higher than *dor* and *to*. The former accent may be heard in the Irish pronunciation of English.

β. These inflections are nearly always confined to the last few syllables of the sentence. In some questions, however, they appear twice, generally occurring first on the verb; and occasionally the circumflex on the verb is the only one.

γ. Questions that cannot be answered by "yes" or "no" usually begin high, the pitch depending on the emphasis. The voice then falls, but generally rises again at the last syllable, going up about three semitones: as *o cóme* \ *hái fátto* / ("how did you do it?"). This accent is common among the Irish, and may be heard in England. The final rise is, however, often omitted, especially in very short sentences and in polite phrases: as *cóme sta* \ ("how do you do?").

4. α. Exclamations of surprise begin very high, and sink rapidly: as *sênti* \ ("no!"*) ; *un affár di niênte* \ ("you don't say so!"*), where *un* has the main stress; *per mio bácco* ("I want to know!"*), with the accent on *per*.

β. In calling to persons at a distance, the Tuscans sing rather than speak; the usual tune is *do*, *la*, *sol*, the accented syllable being highest: as *Agostina* ("Augustine!"); *partênza* ("all aboard!").

* Popular New England equivalents.

INDEX.

[The numbers refer to paragraphs. *Ap. N.* means "Appendix, Additional Notes on Pronunciation"; *Ap. V.* stands for "Appendix, Inflections of the Voice."]

A (letter): 2; Ap. N., 2.
A (preposition): 79; 79, *b*, *k*.
Accent: 7; 47; 48; 84; 92, *e*; Ap. V.
Accents: 3; 7.
Address (Forms of): 52.
Adjectives: 26–34.
  Comparison: 31–34.
  Gender: 26; 28.
  Number: 26; 29.
  Position: 27.
  Used as nouns: 20; 30.
Adverbs: 80–85.
  Ci, vi: 47, *a*; 84.
  Comparison: 80, 2.
  Manner: 85.
  Ne: 47, *a*; 56, *b*.
  Never: 83.
  Not, non: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*.
  Only: 82.
  Position: 80, 1.
  So: 85, *a*.
All: 87.
Alphabet: 1; Ap. N., 1.
Altrui: 91, *d*.
Any: 88.
Articles: 9–16.
  Definite: see **Definite**.
  Indefinite: see **Indefinite**.
Augmentatives: 35–37.
Auxiliary Verbs: 53–57.
  Avere: 53, *b*; 54, 3.
  Essere: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3.
  Compound tenses: 54; 56.
  Modal auxiliaries: 57.
Avere: 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b*; 92, 5.

Be: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3; 54, *a*, *c*, *d*, *f*; 92, 126.
Bello: 29, *c*.
Both: 38, 4; 91.
Buono: 29, *c*.

Can: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.
Ci (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.
Ci (pron.): 47–50.
Close Vowels: 3; Ap. N., 3.
Comparison: 31–34; 80, 2.
  Adjectives: 31–34.
  Adverbs: 80, 2.
  Irregular: 31, *a*; 80, 2.
Compound Tenses: 54; 56; 73; 75.
Conditional: 54, 2; 68, *b*; 76; 77; 92, *c*.
  Contracted: 65; 66, 1; 92, *c*.
Conjugation: 53–68; 92.
  First: 59.
  Second: 60.
  Third: 60.

Fourth: 61.
Variations: 63; 66, *a*; 68.
Irregular verbs: 64–68; 92.
Auxiliary verbs: 53–57.
Compound tenses: 54; 56.
Compound verbs: 67, *a*; 93, a.
Conjunctions: 78.
With subjunctive: 77, *d*; 78, *a*, *b*.
Consonants: 4–6; Ap. N., 4–6.
Contraction: 12; 23 (†); 50 (*); 63, *d*; 65; 66, 1; 68, *a*.

Da: 79, *c*, *f*, *g*.
Dates: 38, *b*; 39, *b*.
Definite Article: 10–13.
Form: 10–12.
Use: 12, *a*; 13; 38, *b*; 39, *a*; 45; 69; 70.
Di: 12; 17; 79, *b*, 3, *f*, *h*, *j*.
Diminutives: 35–37.
Do: 54, *g*.
Double Letters: 6.
Doubling: 48, *d*; 93, *a*; Ap. N., 6.

E (letter): 3; 68, *i*, *j*; Ap. N., 3.
E (conjunction): 78; 78, *c*.
Ecco: 48, *e*; 84, *a*.
Essere: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3; 54, *a*, *c*, *d*; 92, 126.
Exclamations: 43, *b*; 79, *b*; Ap. V., 4.

For: 79, *e*.
Fractions: 39, *c*.
Future: 54, 2; 68, *c*; 74; 77.
Contracted: 65; 66, 1.

Gender: 9–11; 14–15; 18–21; 26; 28.
Grande: 29, *c*.

H: 4; 22, *a*; 23, *a*, *c*; 59, *a*.
Have: 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b*, *k*; 57, *a*; 92, 5.
Here: 84.

I (letter): 2; 22, *b*; 23, *b*; 59, *a*; 60; 92, *f*; Ap. N., 2.
I (euphonic): 79; 81.
Imperative: 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.
Imperfect:
Form: 63; 63, *c*; 65; 68, *a*, *k*.
Use: 54, *d*, *e*; 73; 75. [77, *c*
Impersonal Verbs: 51; 51, *k*;
Indefinite Article: 14–16.
Form: 14–15.
Use: 16; 38, 1; 43, *b*.
Infinitive: 48, *b*; 58; 69–72.
Contracted: 65.
Inflections of the voice: Ap. V.
Interrogation: see **Questions**.
Issimo (suffix): 35, *a*.
It: 47; 51; 51, *k*.

Letters: 1; Ap. N., 1.

May: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.
Modal Auxiliaries: 57.
Moods: 57; 69–77; 78, *a*.
Conditional: 54, 2; 65; 66, 1; 68, *b*; 76; 77.
Imperative: 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.
Infinitive: 48, *b*; 58; 65; 69–72.
Participle: 54, *a*, *b*; 62; 63, *d*; 69–71.
Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.
Must: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.
Myself, thyself, etc.: 47, 2; 51, *e*.

Ne (adv.): 47, *a*; 56, *b*; 84.
Ne (pron.): 47, 3; 48; 49; 88; 89.

Neuter Verbs: 54, 3; 56, *a*.
Never: 83.
Non: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*.
Not: 80, 1; 81.
Nouns: 17–25.
Gender: 18–21.
Number: 22–25.
Number: 9–11; 22–25; 29.
Numerals: 38–40.
Cardinal: 38.
Ordinal: 39.

O (letter): 3; 59, *b*; Ap. N., 3.
O (conjunction): 78; 78, *c*.
Old Forms: 19 (†); 23 (†); 47 (*); 48, *d*; 50 (*); 63, *d*; 66, *a*; 68; 92; Ap. N., 3, ζ.
One (indefinite): 55; 86.
Only: 82.
Open Vowels: 3; Ap. N., 3.
Ought: see **Modal Auxiliaries**.

Participle: 54, *a*, *b*; 62; 63, *d*; 69–71.
Past: 54, *a*, *b*; 63, *d*; 71, *c*.
Present: 62; 69–71.
Partitive Genitive: 12, *a*; 88; 89.
Passive: 54, 1; 54, *f*; 55; 56, *c*.
Perfect Tenses: 54, 3; 56; 73; 75.
Personal Pronouns: 46–52.
Conjunctive: 47–50.
Form: 47; 48, *c*, *d*; 50; 52, 1.
Position: 48; 49.
Disjunctive: 51–52.
Omission: 51, 2; 51, *h*.
Use: 51; 51, 1; 51, *a*, *b*, *h*.
Pitch: Ap. V.
Plural: 22–25; 29.
Irregular: 23, *d*; 25.
Words in *-co* and *-go*: 23, *c*.
Poetic Forms: see **Old**.
Possessive: 17; 45; 52, 1.
Prefixes: 93, *a*.
Prepositions: 79.
Da: 79, *c*, *f*, *g*.
To: 79, *a*, *b*. [74.
Present: 65; 66, 4; 68, *f*, *g*; 73;
Preterite: 60; 65; 66, 2, 3; 68, *d*, *e*; 75.
Preterite Perfect: 54, 3; 75.
Pronouns: 41–52; 86–91.
Demonstrative: 42.
Indefinite: 86–91.
Interrogative, 43.
Personal: see **Personal**.
Possessive: see **Possessive**.
Reciprocal: see **Reciprocal**.
Reflexive: see **Reflexive**.
Relative: 44.
Pronunciation: 1–8; Ap. N., 1–6; Ap. V.

Quantity: 2; Ap. N., 2.
Qualche: 29, *b*; 89.
Questions: 43; 51, 2; 77, *f*, *g*; 79, *b*; 81, *a*; Ap. V., 3.

Reciprocal pronouns and verbs: 47, 2; 48; 49; 50; 51, 3; 51, *f*; 52, 1; 56, *b*.
Reflexive Pronouns: 47, 2; 48; 49; 50; 51, 3; 52, 1; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.
Reflexive Verbs: 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.

Santo: 29, *c*.
Shall: 54, 2; 57.

Should: 54, 2; 57; 76; 77.
Si: 47–50; 52; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.
So: 85, *a*.
Some: 89.
Spelling: 1–8.
Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.
Suffixes: 35–37; 85; Ap. N., 3.
Syllables: 8.

Tenses:
Compound: 54; 56; 73; 75.
Future: see **Future**.
Imperfect: see **Imperfect**.
Present: see **Present**.
Preterite: see **Preterite**.
Than: 33.
There: 84.
Time of day: 38, *c*.
To: 79, *a*, *b*.

U (letter): 2; Ap. N., 2.

Verbs: 53–77; 92; 93.
Auxiliary verbs: see **Auxiliary**.
Conjugation: see **Conjugation**.
Lists of irregular verbs: 92; 93.
Alphabetical: 93.
By conjugations: 92.
Moods: see **Moods**.
Tenses: see **Tenses**.
Regular verbs: 55–56; 59–63.
Irregular verbs: 64–68; 92.
Regular parts: 66.
Compound verbs: 67, *a*; 93, *a*.
Old forms: 63, *d*; 68; 92.
Vi (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.
Vowels: 2–3; Ap. N., 2–3.

Whatever: 44, *c*.
Whoever: 44, *c*.
Will: 54, 2; 57.
Would: 54, 2; 54, *e*; 57; 76; 77.

You: 52; 86.

ADVERTISEMENTS

Heath's Modern Language Series.

PROVENÇAL.

Outline of Phonology and Morphology (Grandgent). $1.50.

SPANISH.

Hills and Ford's Spanish Grammar. $1.25.

Edgren's Spanish Grammar. 80 cts.

Introducción á la lengua Castellana (Marion and des Garennes). 90 cts.

Ford's Exercises in Spanish Composition. 30 cts.

Ybarra's Practical Method in Spanish. Retail price, $1.00.

Alarcon's El Capitán Veneno (Ford). 50 cts.

Alarcon's Novelas Cortas Escogidas (Remy). 50 cts.

Asensi's Victoria y otros cuentos (Ingraham). 50 cts.

Bardos Cubanos (Hills). 60 cts.

Cuentos Castellanos (Carter and Malloy). Vocabulary. 60 cts.

Cuentos Modernos (De Haan). Vocabulary. *In press.*

Echegaray's O Locura ó Santidad (Geddes and Josselyn). 40 cts.

First Spanish Readings (Matzke). Vocabulary. $1.00.

Galdos's Marianela (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 90 cts.

Nuñez de Arce's El Haz de Leña (Schwill). 65 cts.

Padre Isla's Lesage's Gil Blas (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. $1.00.

Toboada's Cuentos Alegres (Potter). *In press.*

Valdés's José (Davidson). 80 cts.

Valdés's La Alegría del Capitán Ribot (Morrison and Churchman). Notes and Vocabulary. 90 cts.

ITALIAN.

Grandgent's Italian Grammar. 90 cts.

Grandgent's Italian Composition. 50 cts.

First Italian Readings (Bowen). Vocabulary. 90 cts.

Gheradi del Testa's L'oro e l'Orpello (Thurber). 25 cts.

Goldoni's Il vero Amico (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Goldoni's La Locandiera (Geddes and Josselyn). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Goldoni's Un Curioso Accidente (Ford). 30 cts.

SCANDINAVIAN.

Groth's Danish Grammar. $1.00.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

FRENCH GRAMMARS AND READERS.

Edgren's Compendious French Grammar. $1.12.

Edgren's French Grammar, Part I. 35 cts.

Fraser and Squair's French Grammar. $1.12.

Fraser and Squair's Abridged French Grammar. $1.10.

Fraser and Squair's Elementary French Grammar. 90 cts.

Grandgent's Essentials of French Grammar. $1.00.

Bruce's Grammaire Française. $1.12.

Grandgent's Short French Grammar. Help in pronunciation. 75 cts.

Grandgent's French Lessons and Exercises. *First Year's Course for Grammar Schools.* 25 cts. *Second Year's Course.* 30 cts.

Grandgent's Materials for French Composition. Five pamphlets based on *La Pipe de Jean Bart, La dernière classe, Le Siège de Berlin, Peppino, L'Abbé Constantin*, respectively. Each, 12 cts.

Grandgent's French Composition. 50 cts.

Bouvet's Exercises in Syntax and Composition. 75 cts.

Clarke's Subjunctive Mood. An inductive treatise, with exercises. 50 cts.

Hennequin's French Modal Auxiliaries. With exercises. 50 cts.

Kimball's Materials for French Composition. Based on *Colomba, La Belle-Nivernaise*, and *La Tulipe Noire.* Each, 12 cts.

Brigham's Exercises in French Composition. Based on *Sans Famille.* 12 cts.

Storr's Hints on French Syntax. With exercises. 30 cts.

Marcou's French Review Exercises. 20 cts.

Houghton's French by Reading. $1.12.

Hotchkiss' Le Primer Livre de Français. Boards. 35 cts.

Fontaine's Livre de Lecture et de Conversation. 90 cts.

Fontaine's Lectures Courantes. Can follow the above. $1.00.

Story of Cupid and Psyche (Guerber). For French Composition. 18 cts.

Lyon and Larpent's Primary French Translation Book. 60 cts.

Mansion's First Year French. For young beginners. 50 cts.

Méthode Hénin. 50 cts.

Snow and Lebon's Easy French. 60 cts.

Super's Preparatory French Reader. 70 cts.

Anecdotes Faciles (Super). For sight reading and conversation. 25 cts.

French Fairy Tales (Joynes). Vocabulary and exercises. 35 cts.

Bowen's First Scientific Reader. 90 cts.

Davies' Elementary Scientific French Reader. 40 cts.

Heath's French Dictionary. Retail price, $1.50.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

ELEMENTARY FRENCH TEXTS.

Ségur's Les Malheurs de Sophie. Two episodes. Notes, vocabulary and exercises by Elizabeth M. White, High School, Brooklyn, N.Y. 45 cts.

Saintine's Picciola. With notes and vocabulary by Prof. O. B. Super. 45 cts.

Mairêt's La Tâche du Petit Pierre. Notes, vocabulary and exercises by Professor Super, Dickinson College. 35 cts.

Bruno's Tour de la France par deux Enfants. Notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, High School, New York City. 45 cts.

Verne's L'Expédition de la Jeune Hardie (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Gervais Un Cas de Conscience (Horsley). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Génin's Le Petit Tailleur Bouton (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Assolant's Aventure du Célèbre Pierrot (Pain). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Muller's Grandes Découvertes Modernes. Photography and Telegraphy. With notes, vocabulary and appendixes. 25 cts.

Récits de Guerre et de Révolution (Minssen). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Bruno's Les Enfants Patriots (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Bedollière's La Mère Michel et son Chat (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Legouvé and Labiche's La Cigale chez les Fourmis. A comedy in one act, with notes, by W. H. Witherby. 20 cts.

Labiche's La Grammaire (Levi). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Labiche's Le Voyage de M. Perrichon (Wells). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Labiche's La Poudre aux Yeux (Wells). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Dumas's Duc de Beaufort (Kitchen). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Dumas's Monte-Cristo (Spiers). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Assollant's Récits de la Vieille France. Notes by E. B. Wauton. 25 cts.

Berthet's Le Pacte de Famine. With notes by B. B. Dickinson. 25 cts.

Erckmann-Chatrian's L'Histoire d'un Paysan (Lyon). 25 cts.

France's Abeille (Lebon). 25 cts.

Moinaux's Les deux Sourds (Spiers). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

La Main Malheureuse (Guerber). Vocabulary. 25 cts.

Enault's Le Chien du Capitaine (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 35 cts.

Trois Contes Choisis par Daudet (Sanderson). *Le Siège de Berlin, La dernière Classe, La Mule du Pape.* Vocabulary. 20 cts.

Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Conscrit de 1813. Notes and vocabulary by Professor Super, Dickinson College. 45 cts.

Selections for Sight Translation. Fifty fifteen-line extracts compiled by Miss Bruce of the High School, Newton, Mass. 15 cts.

Laboulaye's Contes Bleus. With notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, Central High School, Washington, D.C. 35 cts.

Malot's Sans Famille (Spiers). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

Dumas' La Tulipe Noire. With notes by Professor C. Fontaine, Central High School, Washington, D.C. 40 cts. With vocabulary, 50 cts.

Erckmann-Chatrian's Waterloo. Abridged and annotated by Professor O. B. Super of Dickinson College. 35 cts.

About's Le Roi des Montagnes. Edited by Professor Thomas Logie. 40 cts.

Pailleron's Le Monde où l'on s'ennuie. A comedy with notes by Professor Pendleton of Bethany College, W. Va. 30 cts.

Souvestre's Le Mari de Mme de Solange. With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. 20 cts.

Historiettes Modernes, Vol. I. Short modern stories, selected and edited, with notes, by C. Fontaine, Director of French in the High Schools of Washington, D.C. 60 cts.

Historiettes Modernes, Vol. II. Short stories as above. 60 cts.

Fleurs de France. A collection of short and choice French stories of recent date with notes by C. Fontaine, Washington, D.C. 60 cts.

Sandeau's Mlle. de la Seiglière. With introduction and notes by Professor Warren of Yale University. 30 cts.

Souvestre's Un Philosophe sous les Toits. With notes by Professor Fraser of the University of Toronto. 50 cts. With vocab. 80 cts.

Souvestre's Les Confessions d'un Ouvrier. With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. 30 cts.

Augier's Le Gendre de M. Poirier. One of the masterpieces of modern comedy. Edited by Professor B. W. Wells. 25 cts.

Scribe's Bataille de Dames. Edited by Professor B. W. Wells. 30 cts.

Scribe's Le Verre d'eau. Edited by Professor C. A. Eggert. 30 cts.

Mérimée's Colomba. With notes by Professor J. A. Fontaine of Bryn Mawr College. 35 cts. With vocabulary, 45 cts.

Mérimée's Chronique du Règne de Charles IX. With notes by Professor P. Desages, Cheltenham College, England. 25 cts.

Musset's Pierre et Camille. Edited by Professor O. B. Super. 20 cts.

Jules Verne's Tour du Monde en quatre vingts jours. Notes by Professor Edgren, University of Nebraska. 35 cts.

Jules Verne's Vingt mille lieues sous la mer. Notes and vocabulary by C. Fontaine, High School, Washington, D.C. 45 cts.

Sand's La Mare au Diable (Sumichrast). Vocabulary. 35 cts.

Sand's La Petite Fadette (Super). Vocabulary. 35 cts.

De Vigny's Le Cachet Rouge. With notes by Professor Fortier of Tulane University. 20 cts.

De Vigny's Le Canne de Jonc. Edited by Professor Spiers, with Introduction by Professor Cohn of Columbia University. 40 cts.

Halévy's L'Abbé Constantin. Edited with notes by Professor Thomas Logie. 30 cts. With vocabulary, 40 cts.

Thier's Expédition de Bonaparte en Egypte. With notes by Professor C. Fabregou, College of the City of New York. 25 cts.

Gautier's Jettatura. With introduction and notes by A. Schinz, Ph.D. of Bryn Mawr College. 30 cts.

Guerber's Marie-Louise. With notes. 25 cts.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

Lamartine's Scènes de la Révolution Française (Super). With notes and vocabulary. 40 cents.

Lamartine's Graziella (Warren). Vocabulary. 35 cts.

Lamartine's Jeanne d'Arc (Barrère). Vocabulary. 35 cts.

Michelet: Extraits de l'histoire de France (Wright). 30 cts.

Hugo's La Chute. From *Les Misérables* (Huss). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Hugo's Bug Jargal (Boïelle). 40 cts.

Hugo's Quatre-vingt-treize (Fontaine). Vocabulary. *In press.*

Champfleury's Le Violon de Faïence (Bévenot). 25 cts.

Gautier's Voyage en Espagne (Steel). 25 cts.

Balzac's Le Curé de Tours (Carter). 25 cts.

Balzac: Cinq Scènes de la Comédie Humaine (Wells). 40 cts.

Contes des Romanciers Naturalistes (Dow and Skinner). With notes and vocabulary. *In press.*

Daudet's Le Petit Chose (Super). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Daudet's La Belle-Nivernaise (Boïelle). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Theuriet's Bigarreau (Fontaine). 25 cts.

Musset: Trois Comédies (McKenzie). 30 cts.

Maupassant: Huit Contes Choisis (White). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Taine's L'Ancien Régime (Giese). Vocabulary. 65 cts.

Advanced Selections for Sight Translation. Extracts, twenty to fifty lines long, compiled by Mme. T. F. Colin, Wellesley College. 15 cts.

Dumas' La Question d'Argent (Henning). 30 cts.

Lesage's Gil Blas (Sanderson). 40 cts.

Sarcey's Le Siège de Paris (Spiers). 35 cts.

About's La Mère de la Marquise (Brush). Vocabulary. 40 cts.

Chateaubriand's Atala (Kuhns). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Juif Polonais (Manley). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Feuillet's Roman d'un jeune homme pauvre (Bruner). Vocab. 55 cts.

Labiche's La Cagnotte (Farnsworth). 25 cts.

La Brète's Mon Oncle et Mon Curé (Colin). Vocabulary. 45 cts.

Meilhac and Halévy's L'Eté de la St.-Martin (François). Vocab. 25 cts.

Voltaire's Zadig (Babbitt). Vocabulary. 45 cts.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

De Vigny's Cinq Mars (Sankey). Abbreviated. 70 cts.

Zola's La Débâcle (Wells). Abbreviated. 70 cts.

Choix d'Extraits de Daudet (Price). 20 cts.

Sept Grands Auteurs du XIXe Siècle (Fortier). Lectures. 60 cts.

French Lyrics (Bowen). 60 cts.

Lamartine's Méditations (Curme). 75 cts.

Loti's Pêcheur d'Islande (Super). 30 cts.

Loti's Ramuntcho (Fontaine). 30 cts.

Renan's Souvenirs d'Enfance et de Jeunesse (Babbitt). 75 cts.

Beaumarchais's Le Barbier de Seville (Spiers). 25 cts.

Hugo's Hernani (Matzke). 60 cts.

Hugo's Les Misérables (Super). Abridged. 80 cts.

Hugo's Ruy Blas (Garner). 65 cts.

Racine's Andromaque (Wells). 30 cts.

Racine's Athalie (Eggert). 30 cts.

Racine's Esther (Spiers). 30 cts.

Corneille's Le Cid (Warren). 30 cts.

Corneille's Cinna (Matzke). 30 cts.

Corneille's Horace (Matzke). 30 cts.

Corneille's Polyeucte (Fortier). 30 cts.

Molierè's L'Avare (Levi). 35 cts.

Molierè's Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme (Warren). 30 cts.

Molierè's Le Misanthrope (Eggert). 30 cts.

Molierè's Les Femmes Savantes (Fortier). 30 cts.

Molierè's Le Tartuffe (Wright). 30 cts.

Molierè's Le Médecin Malgré Lui (Gasc). 15 cts.

Molierè's Les Précieuses Ridicules (Toy). 25 cts.

Piron's La Métromanie (Delbos). 40 cts.

Warren's Primer of French Literature. 75 cts.

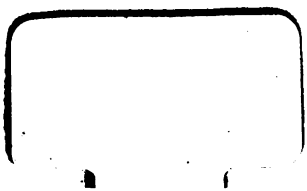
La Bruyère: Les Caractères (Warren). 50 cts.

Lesage's Lurcaret (Kerr). 30 cts.

Taine's Introduction à l'Histoire de la Littérature Anglaise. With essay on Taine by Professor Irving Babbitt, Harvard University. 20 cts.

Duval's Histoire de la Littérature Française. In easy French. $1.00.

Voltaire's Prose (Cohn and Woodward). $1.00.

French Prose of the XVIIth Century (Warren). $1.00.

La Triade Française. Poems of Lamartine Musset, and Hugo, with introductions and notes by L. Both-Hendriksen. 75 cts.